

世界上最感人的书信

The Most Moving Letters in the World

一个人也许在一个小时里就能爱上另一个人的美，而放弃这份爱也仅需一个小时而已；但两个人若灵魂相惜，才是真正懂得了爱的真谛。

名家名篇·双语阅读

The Most Beautiful English

美丽英文

[英]夏洛蒂·勃朗特等/著　安娜/译

黑龙江人民出版社



本书选译的书信均为全世界名人书信中的经典之作。在这些伟大人物的书信中，包含着他们对成功、对痛苦的最真切的体验，对亲人、对朋友的挚诚之爱。阅读这一封封弥足珍贵的家书，不仅让我们感受到了大师们内心最质朴、最真实的一面，还会使我们走进大师们的生活之中，倾听他们诠释人生的真谛。

The Most Beautiful English
The Most Moving Letters in the World

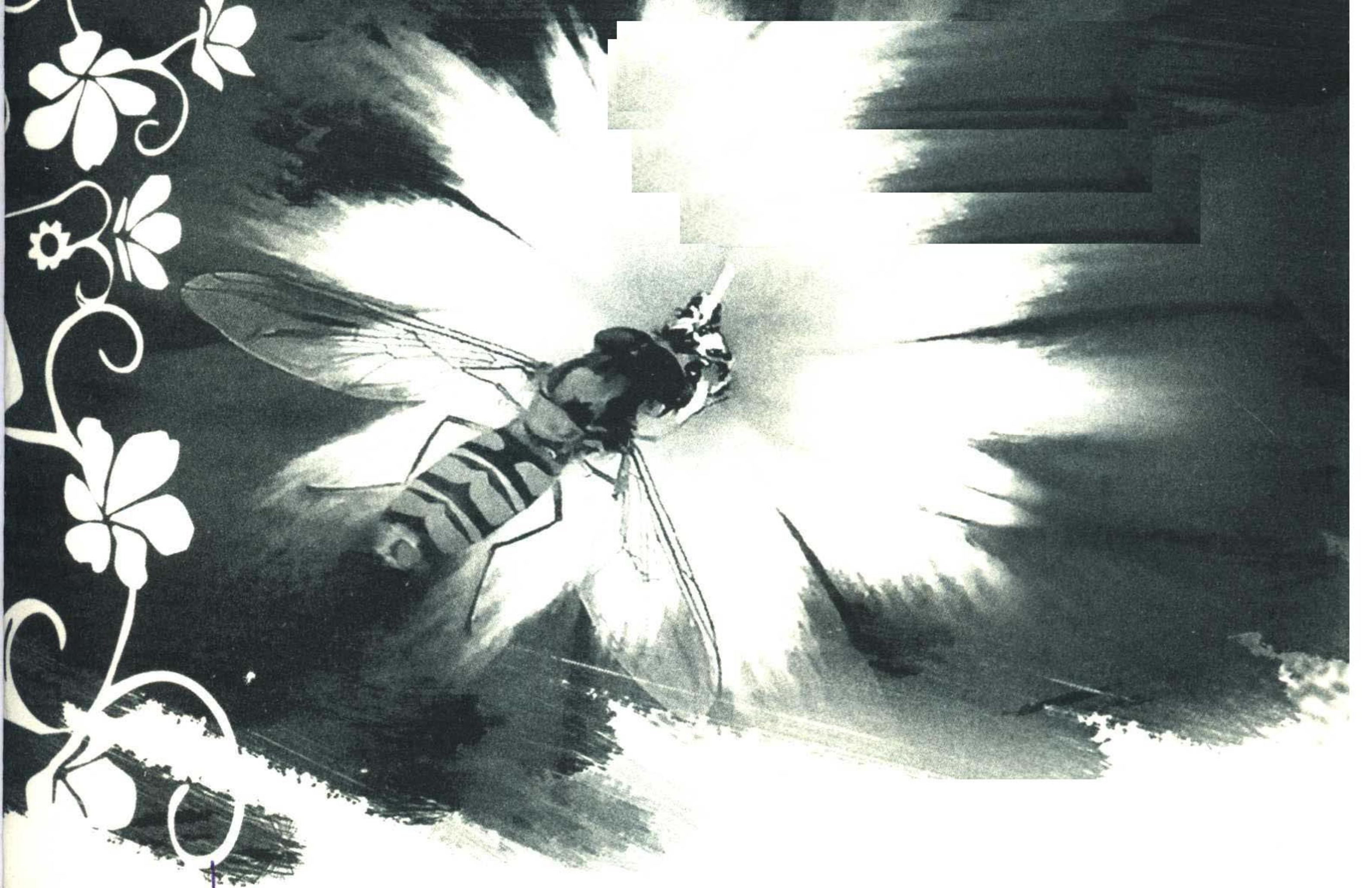
本书为大学生、中学生英汉双语的最佳读物，
是书信爱好者的理想选择。

上架建议：文学类　英语类

ISBN 7-207-07164-7

9 787207 071644 >

ISBN 7-207-07164-7/I·958
定价：21.80 元



H319.4
4100

世界上最感人的书信

The Most Moving Letters in the World

名家名篇·双语阅读

The Most Beautiful English

美丽英文

[英]夏洛蒂·勃朗特等 / 著　安娜 / 译

黑龙江人民出版社

图书在版编目(CIP)数据

美丽英文——世界上最感人的书信/(英)夏洛蒂·勃朗特等著;安娜译. —哈尔滨:黑龙江人民出版社,2007.1

ISBN 7-207-07164-7

Ⅰ.美… Ⅱ.①夏… ②安… Ⅲ.①英语—汉语—对照读物 ②名人—书信集—世界 Ⅳ.K812

中国版本图书馆 CIP 数据核字(2006)第 123916 号

责任编辑:刘丽奇

总体策划:大 田

装帧设计:董文莹

美丽英文——世界上最感人的书信

[英]夏洛蒂·勃朗特等 著 安娜 译

出版发行	黑龙江人民出版社
通讯地址	哈尔滨市南岗区宣庆小区 1 号楼
邮 编	150008
网 址	www.longpress.com E-mail: hljrmcbs@yeah.net
印 刷	黑龙江新华印刷厂
经 销	全国新华书店
开 本	850mm × 1168mm 1/16
印 张	14
字 数	360 千字
版 次	2007 年 1 月第 1 版 第 1 次印刷
书 号	ISBN 7-207-07164-7/I·958
定 价	21.80 元

(如发现本书有印刷质量问题,印刷厂负责调换)

我对你的感情已不仅仅是一个“爱”字就能够表达得了的，没有你，我的人生就不再完整。对我而言，你就是我的生活。

——里根致夫人

诚然，这世间有许多的女人，而且有些非常美丽，但是哪里还能找到一副容颜，它的每一根线条，甚至每一处皱纹，都能唤起我生命中最强烈、最美好的回忆？

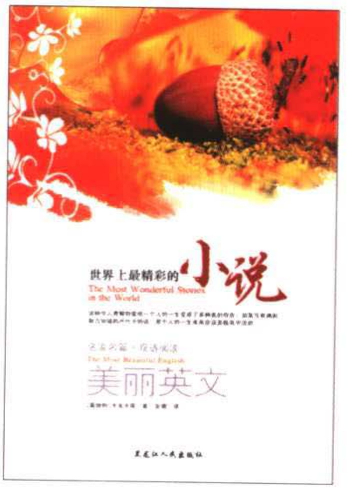
——马克思致燕妮

当两颗灵魂在人海中久久寻觅，最终相遇时……彼此结合，炽热而纯粹……生于尘世，续于天堂。这种结合就是爱，是真爱……是宗教，愿把爱人奉为神，就算为彼此献出生命也毫无怨言。

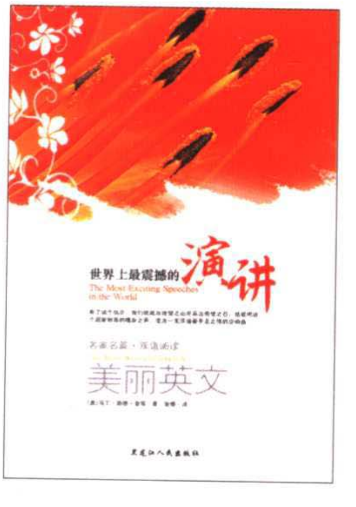
——雨果致阿黛勒·福契

责任编辑：刘丽奇


世界上最动听的诗歌
The Most Beautiful Verses in the World
美丽英文


世界上最精彩的小说
The Most Wonderful Stories in the World
美丽英文


世界上最优美的散文
美丽英文


世界上最震撼的演讲
The Most Exciting Speeches in the World
美丽英文

Moving Letters in the World

Contents 目录

华盛顿致妻子的信 / [美] 乔治·华盛顿 / 1
George Washington to His Wife / George Washington / 2

霍桑致妻子的信 / [美] 纳撒尼尔·霍桑 / 3
Nathaniel Hawthorne to His Wife / Nathaniel Hawthorne / 4

海明威致女儿的信 / [美] 欧内斯特·海明威 / 5
Ernest Hemingway to His Daughter / Ernest Hemingway / 7

海明威致母亲的信 / [美] 欧内斯特·海明威 / 9
Ernest Hemingway to His Mother / Ernest Hemingway / 11

阿比盖尔·亚当斯致丈夫的信 / [美] 阿比盖尔·亚当斯 / 14
Abigail Adams to Her Husband / Abigail Adams / 15

约翰·亚当斯致妻子的信 / [美] 约翰·亚当斯 / 17
John Adams to His Wife / John Adams / 19

亨利·詹姆斯致姐姐的信 / [美] 亨利·詹姆斯 / 21
Henry James to His Sister / Henry James / 22

奥格登·纳什致女儿的信 / [美] 奥格登·纳什 / 24
Ogden Nash to His Daughter / Ogden Nash / 26

艾温·布鲁克斯·怀特致母亲的信 / [美] 艾温·布鲁克斯·怀特 / 28
E. B. White to His Mother / E. B. White / 30

约翰·奥哈拉致女儿的信 / [美] 约翰·奥哈拉 / 33
John O'hara to His Daughter / John O'hara / 37

马克·吐温致妻子的信 / [美] 马克·吐温 / 41
Mark Twain to His Wife / Mark Twain / 44

爱默生致惠特曼的信 / [美] 爱默生 / 47
Emerson to Whitman / Emerson / 48

杰斐逊致侄子的信 / [美] 托马斯·杰斐逊 / 49
Thomas Jefferson to His Nephew / Thomas Jefferson / 52

本杰明·富兰克林致姐姐的信 / [美] 本杰明·富兰克林 / 55
Benjamin Franklin to His Sister / Benjamin Franklin / 57

海伦·凯勒致爱德华·黑尔博士的信 / [美] 海伦·凯勒 / 60
Hellen Keller to Dr. Edward Hale / Hellen Keller / 61

爱伦·坡致惠特曼夫人的信 / [美] 爱伦·坡 / 63
Allan Poe to Mrs. Whitman / Allan Poe / 66

尤金·奥尼尔致卡洛塔·奥尼尔的信 / [美] 尤金·奥尼尔 / 69
Eugene O'Neil to Carlotta O'Neil / Eugene O' Neil / 70

罗纳德·里根致夫人的信 / [美] 罗纳德·里根 / 72
Ronald Reagan to His Wife / Ronald Reagan / 73

爱因斯坦致罗斯福的信 / [美] 阿尔伯特·爱因斯坦 / 74
Einstein to Roosevelt / Albert Einstein / 76

罗伯特·骚塞致夏洛蒂·勃朗特的信 / [英] 罗伯特·骚塞 / 78
Robert Southey to Charlotte Bronte / Robert Southey / 80

夏洛蒂·勃朗特致罗伯特·骚塞的信 / [英] 夏洛蒂·勃朗特 / 82
Charlotte Bronte to Robert Southey / Charlotte Bronte / 84

罗伯特·勃朗宁致伊丽莎白·勃朗宁的信 / [英] 罗伯特·勃朗宁 / 86
Robert Browning to Elizabeth Browning / Robert Browning / 87

伊丽莎白·勃朗宁致罗伯特·勃朗宁的信 / [英] 伊丽莎白·勃朗宁 / 89
Elizabeth Browning to Robert Browning / Elizabeth Browning / 91

温斯顿·丘吉尔致妻子的信 / [英] 温斯顿·丘吉尔 / 93
Winston Churchill to His Wife / Winston Churchill / 95

温斯顿·丘吉尔致女儿的信 / [英] 温斯顿·丘吉尔 / 97
Winston Churchill to His Daughter / Winston Churchill / 98

雪莱致伊丽莎白·西琴勒的信 / [英] 珀西·比希·雪莱 / 99
Percy Bysshe Shelley to Elizabeth Hitchhiker / Percy Bysshe Shelley / 100

雪莱致济慈的信 / [英] 珀西·比希·雪莱 / 102
Percy Bysshe Shelley to Keats / Percy Bysshe Shelley / 103

济慈致雪莱的信 / [英] 约翰·济慈 / 105
John Keats to Shelley / John Keats / 106

托马斯·爱德华·劳伦斯致母亲的信 / [英] 托马斯·爱德华·劳伦斯 / 108
T. E. Lawrence to His Mother / T. E. Lawrence / 110

拜伦致夫人的信 / [英] 乔治·戈登·拜伦 / 112
George Gordon Byron to Lady Byron / George Gordon Byron / 114

拜伦致桂乔丽伯爵夫人的信 / [英] 乔治·戈登·拜伦 / 117
George Gordon Byron to Countess Teresa Guiccioli / George Gordon Byron / 118

查尔斯·狄更斯致凯瑟琳的信 / [英] 查尔斯·狄更斯 / 119
Charles Dickens to Catherine / Charles Dickens / 120

托马斯·哈代致伊凡菊林·史密斯的信 / [英] 托马斯·哈代 / 121
Thomas Hardy to Evangeline Smith / Thomas Hardy / 122

达尔文致父亲的信 / [英] 查尔斯·达尔文 / 124
Charles Darwin to R.W. Darwin / Charles Darwin / 125

切斯特菲尔德伯爵致儿子的信 / [英] P.D.斯坦诺普·切斯特菲尔德 / 127
Philip Dormer Stanhope Chesterfield to His Son / Philip Dormer Stanhope Chesterfield / 128

塞缪尔·约翰逊致切斯特菲尔德伯爵的信 / [英] 塞缪尔·约翰逊 / 130
Samuel Johnson to Chesterfield / Samuel Johnson / 131

赫胥黎致母亲的信 / [英] 托马斯·亨利·赫胥黎 / 133
Thomas Henry Huxley to His Mother / Thomas Henry Huxley / 134

简·奥斯汀致姐姐的信 / [英] 简·奥斯汀 / 136
Jane Austen to Her Sister / Jane Austen / 137

海涅致卡蜜尔·塞尔登的信 / [德] 亨利希·海涅 / 139
Heinrich Heine to Camile Sleden / Heinrich Heine / 140

贝多芬致其"永恒的爱人"的信 / [德] 贝多芬 / 141
Beethoven to His "Immortal Beloved" / Beethoven / 143

马克思致燕妮的信 / [德] 卡尔·马克思 / 146
Marx to Jenny Marx / Karl Marx / 148

狄德罗致索菲·波莱德的信 / [法] 丹尼斯·狄德罗 / 151
Diderot to Sophia Poland / Denis Diderot / 152

朱丽叶·德鲁埃致雨果的信 / [法] 朱丽叶·德鲁埃 / 153
Juliette Drouet to Victor Hugo / Juliette Drouet / 154

雨果致阿黛勒·福契的信 / [法] 维克多·雨果 / 155
Victor Hugo to Adele Foucher / Victor Hugo / 158

玛丽·巴什科采夫致莫泊桑的信 / [俄] 玛丽·巴什科采夫 / 162
Marie Bashkirtseff to Guy de Maupassant / Marie Bashkirtseff / 163

莫泊桑致玛丽·巴什科采夫的信 / [法] 居伊·德·莫泊桑 / 164
Guy de Maupassant to Marie Bashkirtseff / Guy de Maupassant / 165

拿破仑致约瑟芬的信 / [法] 拿破仑·波拿巴 / 167
Napoleon Bonaparte to Josephine / Napoleon Bonaparte / 168

巴尔扎克致汉斯卡夫人的信 / [法] 巴尔扎克 / 170
Honore de Balzac to Madame Evelina Hanska / Balzac / 172

福楼拜致乔治·桑的信 / [法] 居斯塔夫·福楼拜 / 174
Gustave Flaubert to George Sand / Gustave Flaubert / 175

皮埃尔·居里致未婚妻的信 / [法] 皮埃尔·居里 / 176
Pierre Curie to His Future Wife / Pierre Curie / 177

蒙田致居松伯爵夫人的信 / [法]蒙田 / 179
Montaigne to Comtesse de Gurson / Montaigne / 181

玛丽亚·谢利斯特·伽利略致父亲的信 / [意大利] 玛丽亚·谢利斯特·伽利略 / 183
Maria Celeste Galilei to Galileo / Maria Celeste Galilei / 184

伽利略致开普勒的信 / [意大利] 伽利略奥·伽利略 / 185
Galileo Galilei to Kepler / Galileo Galilei / 186

开普勒致伽利略的信 / [德] 约翰尼斯·开普勒 / 187
Johannes Kepler to Galileo / Johannes Kepler / 188

契诃夫致高尔基的信 / [俄] 契诃夫 / 189
Anton Pavlovich Chekhov to Gorky / Chekhov / 191

列夫·托尔斯泰致维拉利亚·阿森涅娃的信 / [俄] 列夫·托尔斯泰 / 193
Count Leo Tolstoi to Valeria Arsenev / Count Leo Tolstoi / 195

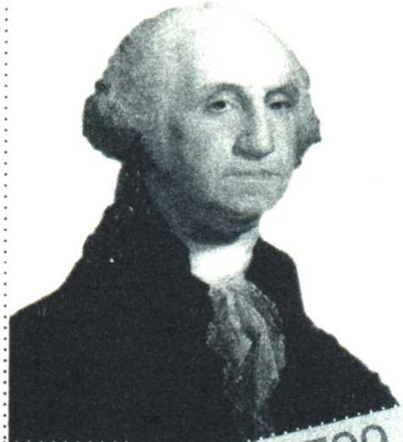
罗伯特·彭斯致埃里森·拜珀的信 / [苏格兰] 罗伯特·彭斯 / 198
Robert Burns to Ellison Begbie / Robert Burns / 199

李斯特致卡尔·车尔尼的信 / [匈牙利] 弗朗茨·李斯特 / 201
Franz Liszt to Carl Czerny / Franz Liszt / 202

卡夫卡致父亲的信 / [奥地利] 弗兰茨·卡夫卡 / 204
Franz Kafka to His Father / Franz Kafka / 206

莫扎特致父亲的信 / [奥地利] 莫扎特 / 208
Mozart to His Father / Mozart / 209

凡·高致弟弟的信 / [荷兰] 文森特·凡·高 / 211
Vincent van Gogh to Theo van Gogh / Vincent van Gogh / 213



作者简介 1732—1799

乔治·华盛顿

George Washington

美利坚合众国的奠基人、第一任总统。生于弗吉尼亚的威克弗尔德庄园，是一位富有的种植园主之子。青年时期的华盛顿曾在军中服役，他积极参加了法国同印第安人之间的战争，获得了军事经验和威望。1758年，他解甲归田，不久便与一位带有四个孩子的富孀——玛莎·丹德利居·卡斯蒂斯结了婚。华盛顿指挥才能卓越，而且性格坚忍不拔，因此1775年6月，他被第二届大陆会议一致推选为大陆部队的统帅。在整个独立战争期间，他忠诚效劳，分文不取，廉洁奉公，堪称楷模。华盛顿担任总统后，仍然恪尽职守，对美国做出了巨大贡献，被尊为"美国国父"。

本文是他1775年成为大陆军队总司令之后写给妻子的信。在信中，华盛顿表明他并无谋求官职的欲望，只想在战事结束后回到妻子的身旁，表达了他对妻子深深的爱恋。

华盛顿致妻子的信

当我以最庄严的方式向您保证时，希望您能相信我，我并没有去谋求这个职位；相反，我始终竭尽全力去回避这个职位。这不仅因为我不想与家人分离，也是因为我自觉难以胜任；恐怕我在异乡待上七七四十九年所寻求的快乐也比不上你我在家相守一个月所享受的快乐。可是，既然被委以重任是命中注定了的事，我只求接受这一重任是为了实现崇高的目的……

我祈求一直庇护着我的上帝，能够让我在今秋安然无恙地回到你身边。我不会因军营之中的种种磨炼和危险而感到痛苦，可是当我想到你独自一人在家为我感到不安的时候却常常忧心忡忡。正因如此，我希望你能够鼓足勇气，坚强地面对生活，要尽可能让自己快乐起来。如果能够收到你的亲笔来信，告诉我一切都好，那将是最令我感到安慰的事情。

乔治·华盛顿

相关链接

手表与秘书

华盛顿有一个年轻的秘书。一天早晨，这位秘书迟到了，他发现华盛顿正在等候着，感到很内疚，便说他的表出了毛病。华盛顿平静地回答："恐怕你得换一只表，否则我就要换一位秘书了。"

George Washington to His Wife

You may believe me, when I assure you **in the most solemn manner**[1] that, so far from seeking this employment, I have used every effort in my power to avoid it, not only from my unwillingness to part with you and the family, but from a **consciousness**[2] of its being a trust too great for my capacity; and I should enjoy more real happiness in one month with you at home that I have the most distant prospect of finding abroad; if my stay were to be seven times seven years. But as it has been a kind of destiny that has thrown me upon this service, I shall hope that has my undertaking it is designed to answer some good purpose …



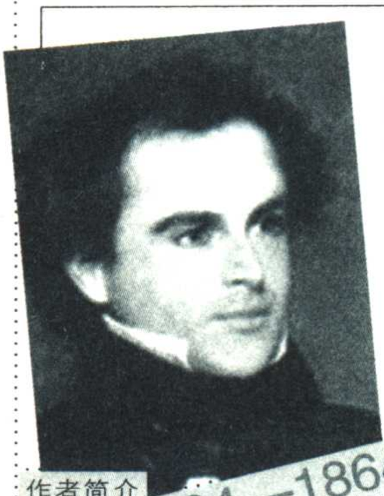
1759年1月6日，乔治·华盛顿与玛莎·丹德利居·卡斯蒂斯举行了婚礼。

I shall rely confidently on that **Providence**[3] which has **heretofore**[4] preserved and been **bountiful**[5] to me, not doubting but that I shall return safe to you in the fall. I shall feel no pain from the toil or danger of the campaign; my unhappiness will flow from the **uneasiness**[6] I know you will feel from being left alone. I therefore beg that you will summon your whole fortitude, and pass your times agreeably as possible. Nothing will give me so much sincere satisfaction as to hear this, and to hear it from your own pen.

George Washington.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. in the most solemn manner 指“以最庄严的方式”。
2. consciousness [ˈkɔnʃəsnis] *n.* 意识，个人思想
3. providence [ˈprɔvidəns] *n.* 深谋远虑，天意，神的眷顾，文中是最后一种意思。
4. heretofore [ˈhiətuˈfɔː] *adv.* 直到此时，迄今，此时以前
5. bountiful [ˈbauntiful] *adj.* 慷慨的，宽大的
6. unease [ˈʌnˈiːz] *n.* 不舒适，不安



作者简介

1804—1864

纳撒尼尔·霍桑

Nathaniel Hawthorne

19世纪美国影响最大的浪漫主义小说家和心理小说家。他生于新英格兰的一个破落贵族家庭，后来迁至萨莱姆，那里浓厚的宗教气氛和激烈的宗教派别斗争对他的思想和创作产生了极大的影响。霍桑的作品擅长心理描写和揭示人物的内心冲突，常用象征手法挖掘潜藏于事物深处的意义，带有浓厚的宗教气氛和神秘色彩，其文字较为晦涩，充满阴郁的基调。代表作有长篇小说《红字》、《带有七个尖角阁的房子》和《福谷传奇》等。

霍桑写这封情书时正处在热恋之中。情书中连用两个修辞问句，与其说是疑问，不如说是铿锵的回答。他们是天造的一双，他们用爱找到了自己的伊甸园。整篇情书反映出他们不顾“世俗喧嚣”，对爱情的执着追求。

霍桑致妻子的信

我的爱人，我确信你为我们选定了今天这个晴朗的好日子；而我，却在城堡主楼里困了一天。唯一的一缕光明是在我打开你的信后才得到的。我常常幻想着——我们一同驾上一朵白云，远离尘世间的喧嚣——就像我们一同漫步时常常幻想的那样。可现在，我们的身边尽是些不相干的人。亚当和夏娃是多么幸福啊！他们之间没有第三者介入，而周围的无限空间似乎使他们的心更加贴近了。我们也一样彼此相爱，却无法拥有一片只属于我们的伊甸园。你愿意与我一同远行，去寻找那夏之岛吗？你不认为上帝早在创世之初就为我们留下了这样一座岛吗？也许这样的问题有些可笑，因为我们已经找到了这样一座神圣的伊甸园——只要我们在一起！我们就是那片净土之上的亚当和夏娃。现在，我要向你说再见了。只因我的周围一片嘈杂。不知你在读此信时，是否也有这样的声音萦绕在耳际。



相关链接

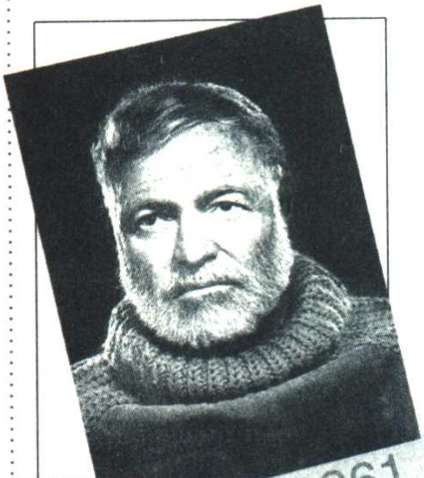
很多与霍桑同时代的人都描写过霍桑出众的外表，比如他精致完美的五官，比如他明亮的眼神和迷人的微笑。他是一个极为害羞的男人，在大庭广众之下往往沉默寡言，总是以眼神和微笑作答，这样反而为他增添了无穷的魅力。他头一次拜访索菲亚(后来成为霍桑的妻子——编者注)家的时候，索菲亚的姐姐伊丽莎白兴奋地向楼上的妹妹喊道："他比拜伦勋爵还要英俊！"

Nathaniel Hawthorne to His Wife

I do trust, my dearest, that you have been **employing**[1] this bright day for both of us; for I have spent it in my dungeon, and the only light that broke upon me was when I opened your letter. I am sometimes driven to wish that you and I could mount upon a cloud (as we used to fancy in those heavenly walks of ours). And be home quite out of sight and hearing of the world; for now all the people in the world seem to come between us. How happy were **Adam and Eve**[2]! There was no third person to come between them, and all the infinity around them only seemed to press their hearts closer together. We love one another as well as there is no silent and love garden of Eden for us. Will you sail away with me to discover some summer island? Do you not think that god has reserved one for us, ever since the beginning of the world? Foolish that I am to raise a question of it, since we have found such an Eden … such an island sacred to us two … whenever we have been together! Men we are the Adam and Eve of a virgin earth. Now, good-bye; for voices are **babbling**[3] around me and I should not wonder if you were to hear the echo of them while you read this letter.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. employ [im'plɔi] *vt.* 雇佣，在文中指选定
2. Adam and Eve 亚当和夏娃
3. babble ['bæbl] *v.* 喋喋不休



作者简介

1899—1961

欧内斯特·海明威

Ernest Hemingway

美国著名作家。他的早期长篇小说有《太阳照样升起》、《永别了，武器》，并成为表现美国"迷惘的一代"的主要代表作；三、四十年代时，他创作了赞美反法西斯战士的作品《第五纵队》和长篇小说《丧钟为谁而鸣》；五十年代的时候，他又发表了巨著《老人与海》，并且凭借这部作品而获得1954年的诺贝尔文学奖。海明威是美利坚民族的精神丰碑，他的创作在现代文学史上留下了光辉的一页。他以自己的经历披露了当权者的伪善和现实的残酷，刻画了美国年轻一代的迷惘情绪，作品中洋溢着对劳动人民的热爱。海明威晚年时不幸患上多种疾病，精神也因此变得抑郁。1961年，海明威不堪病痛的折磨而自杀。

这是海明威写给女儿的信，他用了很大的篇幅，来向女儿"汇报"自己的工作和休闲，虽然是很普通的家常话，却表露出海明威"硬汉"形象之外的温情和对子女的慈爱。

海明威致女儿的信

亲爱的基特纳：

我一直在努力地工作，但对你的思念却与日俱增。今天我没有收到任何邮件。我于前天给你写了一封信，今天又附上一封信，希望你能够转交给非伦沙的艾塞尔。此时已是日暮时分。自你离开那天起，这里一直是秋高气爽。我和埃米利欧去打猎时，共捕获二十五只小鸟。我们原本可以再打到两只野鸭——当我们正在吃午饭的时候它们从我们头上掠过，于是我们便错失了良机。

除了给阿尔弗雷德·赖斯的信之外，我已经回复了所有信件。也许我会先完成自己的写作再给赖斯写信。因为我还要去威尼斯办理委任书的公证。对了，我也给查利·里茨写了一封信。

明天（星期天）上午，或者星期一，我们要去打野鸭。埃米利欧今晚将来通知我确切时间。上次打猎时我们多是从高处向下射击，这使我的肩膀至今仍感到酸痛；因此，我希望能够星期一去，不然的话我的肩膀可能会不堪重负。我现在已经掌握了射击的技巧，但还没有开始学习双管枪射击。

由于码头工人罢工事件频发，已有五万

多件邮件滞留在纽约码头。相信你已看过相关报道，不需要我更详细地描述一番了。

你最近的摄影作品（塔等等）非常棒！我是在昨晚收到的。

我没有收到奇尔狄斯的任何消息。

希望你能够收到好消息。

我现在坚持晚上读书，直至午夜，或凌晨一点。

没有收到任何地方的新闻。穆基的脚已经好了。我今天在室外吃了顿午饭，那只米色的小狗一直把头放在我的膝盖上。它不吵也不闹，只是待在那里。另一只小狗博比，是克里兹的兄弟，它能够坐起来讨食，还会做"你好"和"见到你真高兴"等表达问候的动作。

现在，其他人都已不在这里住了。中午时，有几对夫妇在这里共进午餐。其中一个眉清目秀的女子，有些像电影明星，或许其中两个衣着入时的女子都是（坐得直直的，浓妆艳抹）。一个像布鲁斯代尔一样的男人带着一个女人，还有一对比利时夫妇——只要闻一下，我就知道他们是来自比利时的游人。

代我向你所有的朋友问好。我爱你，我的小猫咪。祝你身体健康，生活愉快。现在，天已经黑了下来，还不时能听到几声枪响。我一直在努力回想，比利时人身上的味道像什么（战后的比利时游人）。我想，也许是多种味道混合在一起形成的一种怪味吧——叛变的国王，挤在一起的脚趾，没有洗的肚脐，破旧的自行车座（浸着汗），铺路的石子，大量钱财，再加上一点儿韭菜汤和烹调用的欧洲防风根和在一起的味道。

我爱你，最亲爱的基特纳，我非常非常非常非常非常非常想念你。

爸爸

1948年11月20日于托塞罗



相关链接

拉票信

有一个竞选州长的议员知道海明威很有声望，想请海明威替他写一篇颂扬文章，以此为他多拉一些选票，海明威一口答应。第二天，议员收到了海明威送来的一封信，拆开一看，里面是海明威的太太写给海明威的一封情书。议员以为是海明威匆忙之中把信弄错了，便把原件退回，并再次请求帮助。不久，海明威又送来第二封信，议员打开一看，竟是一张遗嘱。于是他就亲自找到海明威，想问一问其中的原由。海明威无可奈何地说："我家里除了情书以外，只有遗嘱了。你还能叫我拿什么东西给你呢？"

Ernest Hemingway to His Daughter

Torcello, 20 November 1948.

Dearest Kittner,

Been working hard and missing you harder. No mails today at all. I wrote you day before yest and forwarded a letter from your family to the Excelsior in Firenze today. Now writing you just at sun set. Been **beautiful fall weather**[1] ever since the day you left. I **went shooting**[2] with Emilio andshot 25 small birds and we might have gotten twoducks as four flashed over us very low but we're eating lunch when it happened. Might have missed them too.

Have my correspondence all done except for letter toRice. Then will do the article. May do the article and then Rice since will have to go into Venice to get Power of Attorney **notarized**[3]. Wrote Charley Ritz too.

There is a big duck shoot either tomorrow(Sunday)a.m. or else Monday. Emilio is going to let me know tonight. Hope it's Monday as my shoulder is sore from those high, **straight up**[4] and down shots. I think those are probably quite heavy loads of the light shot. Can really shoot that over and under now. Haven't started learning the double yet.

Believe magazines etc. held up by the docks trike. They say over 50 000 sacks of mail on the docks in NY. But you read the papleys too sowon't Kalten born the news to you.

Your last pictures(the tower etc.) came out excellently. Got them last night.

No more word from Childies.

Hope your news was good.

I've been trying to stay awake and read until midnight or one a. m.

No local news. Mooky's foot got ok. Ate outdoors in the sun today and he kept his head in my lap all through lunch; clams, sole, white rice plain. Bobby the other dog, Crazy's brother, can situp to beg and also make a how do you do and a Fancy Meeting You.

There's nobody living here now. Today three couples for lunch though; a character who was either a fairy or a **cinema star**[5] or both with reconditioned woman (fenders straightened, bad paint job), a sort of Brusadelli type with woman tomatch and a brace of Belgiums. I can now tell the travelling Belgium as far as can smell them.

Best to all your friends. Love to my kitten. Begood and have good fun. It's dark now and the shooting has started. Been trying to think what a Belgium smells like (the post — war travelling Belgiums) think it is a blend of traitorous King, toe jam, un — washed navels, old bicycle saddles, (sweated), paving stones, and **eminently**[6] sound money with a touch of leek soup and cooking **parsnips**[7].

I love you dearest kittner and miss you very, very very very, very, very much.

Papa

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. beautiful fall weather 美好的秋季天气
2. went shooting 去打猎
3. notarize ['nəutəraiz] *vt.* 证明，确认
4. straight up 直率地，真实地
5. cinema star 影视明星
6. eminent ['eminənt] *adj.* 显赫的，杰出的，文中“eminently sound money”指大量钱财。
7. parsnip ['paːsnip] *n.* 欧洲防风草

这封信是海明威1927年从瑞士的格斯塔德写给母亲的。在信中海明威阐述了自己对于创作的态度，并将母亲对自己的一些误解给予了解释。

海明威致母亲的信

◎ [美]欧内斯特·海明威 Ernest Hemingway

亲爱的母亲：

非常感谢您为我寄来马歇尔·菲尔德的展览目录，以及您在画展中展出的油画《铁匠铺》的复制品。这幅画太棒了！我真想看一看原作。

您曾来信向我谈及《太阳照样升起》这本书，我没有给您回信。因为我无法抑制内心的愤怒之情。带着愤怒的情绪写信绝非明智之举，更何况我写信的对象是母亲，如果我那样做了，岂不是愚蠢至极？对于您来说，不喜欢这本书是很自然的事情，我很抱歉让您看了一本使您感到痛苦，甚至是厌恶的书。

也许我没能准确地刻画出笔下的人物，也许我没能把他们栩栩如生地展现给读者，但除了这些方面以外，我一点都不为这本书感到惭愧，因为这本书并非会使人感到乏味至极。而且，我敢肯定，它并不像奥克·帕克家族内部的真正生活那样令人不悦。您一定还记得，这部书将人们生活中最阴暗的一面全部展现给世人；与此同时，也将家族内美好的一面展现得淋漓尽致，当然，其中也不乏一些我私下里观察到的一些事情。此外，您作为一位艺术家，应该知道一位作家不应该总是被迫为自己所选的创作主题做辩护，而是应该在他如何对待这一主题方面受到的一些评论。毋庸置疑，我笔下的人物尽是些颓废、虚伪、堕落的人——这正是我试图表达的。我只为这本书在某些地方没能完全地表达出我想为读者展示的一切而感到惭愧。不过，在我前面的路还很长，我还可以用一生的时间去完成其他作品，主题也并非一成不变——除非他们能够像我所期望的那样，成为真正的人。

书评俱乐部的淑女们在缺少才智的书评者范妮·布彻小姐的指导下——如果她对这本书赞不绝口，倒会令我很不自在——一致认为我那糟糕的结局

败坏了天才的形象——为什么这些淑女在谈论那些自己根本一窍不通的东西时总是能够蠢话连篇呢？

至于哈德利、本和我——虽然我与哈德利已经有一段时间没有共同居住了——我们从去年九月份开始分居，现在看来哈德利恐怕已经完全抛弃了我，但是我们仍然还可以做最要好的朋友。她和本都很好——身体不错，生活也很愉快。依照我的要求，《太阳照样升起》这部书的所有收益和版税将会从美国和英国直接寄给哈德利。我从1月份的最新一期广告中得知，这部书已经第五次印刷至一万五千册，而且销量仍在急剧上升。该书于春季在英国以《节日》为名出版发行。哈德利将于春季来到美国，所以，您会看到本会因《太阳照样升起》这部书而受益。虽然版税已经达到几千美元，但我却一分钱也没有拿到，依然过着孤寂的生活，每餐只喝些葡萄酒或啤酒，并尽量写出最好的作品。对于什么是最好的作品，我们之间有着不同的见解——几乎从创作原理上就存在着分歧——但是，如果您相信范妮·布彻这类人所说的话，认为我在危言耸听，那么您一定是在自我欺骗。我收到《名利场》、《世界主义者》等刊物的来信，约我写一些短篇小说、文章，或是连载。可是，我最近六个月，甚至可以说是一年都没有发表作品(只是在年底为斯克里布纳的刊物写过几篇短篇小说和一篇幽默文章)，因为我知道，现在是非常时期，已经到了紧要关头。对我而言，安心写作，尽可能创作出更好的作品是最重要的事情。至于市场如何，投稿会带来怎样的利润，甚至我正创作的作品能否出版等等全部被我抛在脑后——这样做要比落入以金钱操控美国作家的陷阱中强得多。这个陷阱就如同玉米脱壳机操纵了某些著名人士的拇指一样。

我把这封信寄给你们二老，很抱歉，我经常会令你们为我担心，这也使我深感内疚。事实上你们不必如此——因为，虽然我不知道我的生命将会以何种方式结束，但我永远会为我所爱的人去做我所能做到的一切(我寄给家里的信并不多，这不仅仅是因为我没有更多的时间，更因为写信让我觉得是件很难的事情，因此，若不是迫不得已，我尽量不写——而且，我所有的好朋友都十分清楚，无论我是否寄信给他们，我都会一如既往地爱着他们)。我从不酗酒——你们一定会听到某些传闻，说我有酗酒的恶习——人们总是喜欢把一个描写过酒鬼的作家冠上酗酒的罪名。我所渴求的一切就是一个安静的写作环境和创作机会。也许你们根本不欣赏我的作品——也许你们会突然爱上某部作品。不管怎样，请你们一定要相信，我是认真对待每部作品的。父亲一向对我很坦诚，而您却恰恰相反。我完全理解——也许，您认为当我选择了一

条灾难性的道路时，您有责任告诫我。

因此，也许我们应该停止那些无谓的争论了。我敢肯定，如果外面谣传的每一件事您都相信，那么您会有足够的理由认为我令您蒙受耻辱。此外，如果您能用一点诚心作为麻醉剂，那么您便会对我表面上的声名狼藉不屑一顾，并最终发现，我根本没有令您蒙受耻辱。

总之，致二老最真心的爱。

欧尼

1927年2月5日于格斯塔德

相关链接

领带与小说

美国有家服饰公司为了招揽生意，于是给海明威送去一条领带，并附一封短信："我公司制作的领带，深受顾客欢迎。现奉上样品一条，请您试用，并望寄回成本费2元。"过了几天，公司收到海明威的回信，并附小说一册，信里写着："我的小说深受读者欢迎，现随信奉上一册，请你们试读。此书价值2元8角，也就是说，你们还欠我8角钱。"

Ernest Hemingway to His Mother

Gstaad, 5 February 1927.

Dear Mother,

Thank you very much for sending me the **catalogue**[1] of the Marshal Field exhibit with there production of your painting of the Black smith Shop in it. It looks very lovely and I should have liked to see the original.

I did not answer when you wrote about the Sun etc. book as I could not help being angry and it is very foolish to write angry letters; and more than foolish to do so to one's mother. It is quite natural for you not to like the book and I regret your reading any book that causes you pain or **disgust**[2].

On the other hand I am in no way ashamed of the book, except in as I may have failed **inaccurately**[3] **portray**[4]ing the people I wrote of, or in making them really come alive to the reader. I amsure the book is unpleasant. But it is not all unpleasant and I

am sure is no more unpleasant than the real inner lives of some of our best Oak Park families. You must remember that in such abook all the worst of the people's lives is displayed while at home there is a very lovely side for the public and the sort of thing of which I have hadsome experience in observing behind closed doors. Besides you, as an artist, know that a writer should not be forced to defend his choice of a subject but should be criticized on how he has treated that subject. The people I wrote of were certainly burned out, hollow and smashed — and that is the way I have attempted to show them. I am only ashamed of the book in whatever way it fails to really give the people I wished to present. I have along life to write other books and the subjects will not always be the same — except as they will all, I hope, be **human beings**[5].

And if the good ladies of the book study club under the guidance of Miss Fanny Butcher, who is not an intelligent reviewer — I would have felt very silly had she praised the book — agree **unanimously**[6] that I am prostituting a great talent etc. For the lowest ends — why the good ladies are talking about something of which they know nothing and saying very foolish things.

As for Hadley, Bumby and myself — altho Hadley and I have not been living in the same house for some time(we have lived apart since last Sept. and by now Hadley may have **divorced**[7] me)we are the very best of friends. She and Bumby are both well, healthy and happy and all the profits and royalties of The Sun Also Rises, by my order, are being paid directly to Hadley, both from America and England. The book has gone into, by the last ads I saw in January, 5 printings (15000)copies, and is still going strongly. It is published in England in the Spring under the title of Fiesta. Hadley is coming to America in the Spring so youcan see Bumby on the profits of Sun Also Rises. I am not taking one cent of the royalties, which are already running into several thousand dollars, have been drinking nothing but my usual wine or beer with meals, have been leading a very **monastic**[8] life and trying to write as well as I am able. We have different ideas about what constitutes good writing — that is simply a **fundamental**[9] disagreement — but you really are deceiving yourself if you allow any Fanny Butchers to tell you that I am **pandering to**[10] sensation — alism etc. etc. I get letters from Vanity Fair, Cosmopolitan etc. asking me for stories, articles, and serials, but am publishing nothing for six months or a year (afew stories sold to Scribner's the end of last year and one funny article out) because I know that now is a very **crucial**[11] time and that it is much more important for me to write in **tranquility**[12], trying towrite as well as I can, with no eye on any market, nor any thought of what the stuff willl bring, or even if it can ever be published — than to fall into the money making trap which handles American writers like the corn husking machine handled my noted relative's thumb.

I'm sending this letter to both of you? because I know you have been worried about me and I am always sorry to cause you worry. But you must not do that — be-

cause, although my life may **smash up**[13] in different ways I will always do all that I can for the people I love(I don't write home a lotbecause I haven't time and because, writing, I find it very hard to write letters and have to restrict correspondence to the letters I have to write — and my real friends know that I am just as fond of them whether I write or not)that I have never been a drunk nor even a steady drinker(You willhear legends that I am — they are tacked on everyone that ever wrote about people who drink)and that all I want is tranquility and a chance to write. You may never like any thing I write — and then suddenly you might like something very much. But you must believe that I am sincere in what I write. Dad has been very loyal and while you, mother, have not been loyal at all I absolutely understand that it is because you believed you owed it to yourself to correct me in a path which seemed to you **disastrous**[14].

So maybe we can drop that all. I am sure that, in the course of my life, you will find much cause to feel that I have disgraced you if you believe everything you hear. On the other hand with alittle shot of loyalty as anaesthetic you may be able to get through all my obvious **disreputability**[15] and find, in the end, that I have not disgraced you at all.

Anyhow, best love to you both,

Ernie

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. catalogue ['kætəlɔg] *n.* 目录
2. disgust [dis'gʌst] *n.* 厌恶,嫌恶 *v.* 令人厌恶,文中作动词
3. inaccurate [in'ækjurit] *adj.* 错误的,不准确的
4. portray [pɔː'trei] *v.* 描绘
5. human beings 人类
6. unanimous [ju(ː)'næniməs] *adj.* 意见一致的,无异议的
7. divorce [di'vɔːs] *n.* 离婚 *vt.* 与……脱离
8. monastic [mə'næstik] *n.* 僧侣,修道士
9. fundamental [ˌfʌndə'mentl] *adj.* 基础的,基本的
10. pander to sth. 迎合,纵容或迁就某事物
11. crucial ['kruːʃiəl] *adj.* 至关紧要的
12. tranquility [tæn'kwiliti] *n.* 宁静
13. smash up 崩溃,瓦解
14. disastrous [di'zaːstrəs] *adj.* 损失惨重的,悲伤的
15. disreputable [dis'repjutəbl] *adj.* 声名狼藉的



1744—1818

阿比盖尔·亚当斯 Abigail Adams

美国第二任总统约翰·亚当斯的妻子，第六任总统约翰·昆西·亚当斯的母亲。她之所以得享盛名，原因之一是她坚决捍卫妇女权利——包括受教育权，她的大量书信充满了智慧和她对这个国家在创立初期的敏锐观察。她与丈夫政见相似，同时对丈夫的政治思想和事业也产生了影响。

阿比盖尔和亚当斯于1764年结婚。她的丈夫公务繁忙，旅行频繁，这意味着他们之间聚少离多，而且她必须独自抚养他们的四个孩子，同时还要扮演丈夫最贴心的政治顾问的角色。尽管如此，他们长达54年的婚姻却充满了温暖、爱情和对知识孜孜不倦的追求，这可从他们相互的书信中看出。以下这封信就表达了阿比盖尔对丈夫的思念、对国家的关心和对知识的渴求。

阿比盖尔·亚当斯致丈夫的信

你我远隔千山万水，这使我感觉时间变得很漫长。自你离开我到现在似乎已经有一个月了。我为祖国、为你、为我们的家园感到忧虑，这使我感到白天过得很沉闷，夜晚也很不愉快。这世上到处都有暗礁和流沙，你对将来的路是怎样设想的现在还不得而知。世事无常，当展望未来时，我们不由得思绪万千。战争年代，有哪个王国或政府没有经过流血牺牲就能获得自由呢？一想到这些我就不寒而栗。

然而，就我所知，斯巴达的不幸缘于他们太关心当前的安宁，太过于珍惜和平，致使他们忽略了保卫国家稳定与持久的诸多策略。他们刚好反映出波里比阿的一句话：当我们以正义和荣誉作为立国之本时，没有什么比和平更值得人们期待的了。因此，再也没有比以卑劣的手段获得和平，或以牺牲自由为代价来换取和平更令人感到耻辱、更具有危害性了。

我从我们的朋友沃伦太太那里收到了一封令人无比振奋的信，她希望我转告你，她想以一个朋友和一个爱国者的身份，祝你一路顺风——希望你能够战胜一切艰难险阻，希望你不要遇到敌人的阻击——可是，一旦洛克里斯人中途将你拦截下来，她希望你谨记，未来的编年史不会说你选择了一个野

心勃勃的菲利普人领导你们，并在已被摧毁了的和谐制度之上建立了君主制。

自从你离开我之后，我越来越喜欢读罗林的《古代史》一书。我已下定决心，要在这孤寂的日子里将这本书读完。我从书中获得了极大的快乐。我说服了约翰尼，请他每天为我读一至两页，希望他也能在满足我的过程中能够获得同样的乐趣，并对它产生兴趣——我们这里下了一场及时雨，整整持续了十二个小时，这使得大地上近乎枯萎的作物都得以复苏。

我非常期待你的来信，我已忍不住想知道你们的行动计划了。对于英国来说，9月份的第一周，甚至可以说是整个9月份就像3月15日对凯撒一样具有重大的意义。我祝愿你在工作和生活中能够诸事顺意；并希望那些远见卓识者能够在这困难时期为你指明前进的方向。——小家伙们让我向你问好，并急切地盼望着能够早日见到你。你最爱的人也是一样，渴望与你早日团聚。

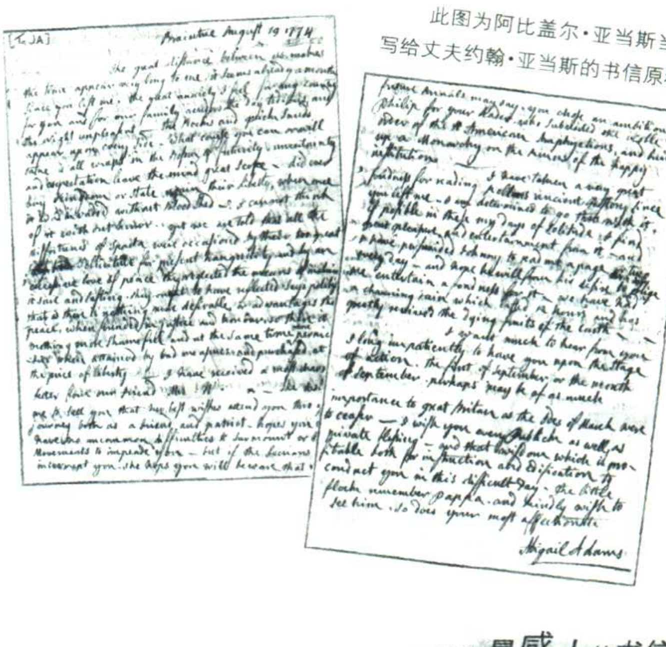
阿比盖尔·亚当斯

1774年8月19日于布蓝垂

Abigail Adams to Her Husband

Braintree August19 1774.

The great distance between us, makes the time appear very long to me. It seems already a month since you left me. The great anxiety I feel for my country, for you and for our family renders the day **tedious**[1], and the night unpleasant. The rocks and **quick sands**[2] appear upon every side. What course you can or will take is all wrapt in the bosom of **futurity**[3]. Uncertainty and expectation **leave the mind great scope**[4]. Did ever any kingdomor state regain their liberty, when once it was **invaded**[5] without blood shed? I cannot think of it without horror.



此图为阿比盖尔·亚当斯当年写给丈夫约翰·亚当斯的书信原稿。

Yet we are told that all the misfortunes of Sparta were occasioned by their too great solicitude for present tranquility, and by an excessive love of peace they neglected the means of making it sure and lasting. They ought to have reflected says Polibius that as there is nothing more desirable, or advantageous than peace, when founded in justice and honour, so there is nothing more shameful and at the same time more **pernicious**[6] when attained by bad measures, and purchased at the price of liberty.

I have received a most charming letter from our friend Mrs. Warren. She desires me to tell you that her best wishes attend you through your journey both as a friend and **patriot**[7] — hopes you will have no uncommon difficulties to **surmount**[8] or hostile movements to impede you — but if the Locrians should interrupt you, she hopes you will beware that no future annals may say you chose an ambitious Philip for your leader, who built up amonarchy on the ruins of the happy institution.

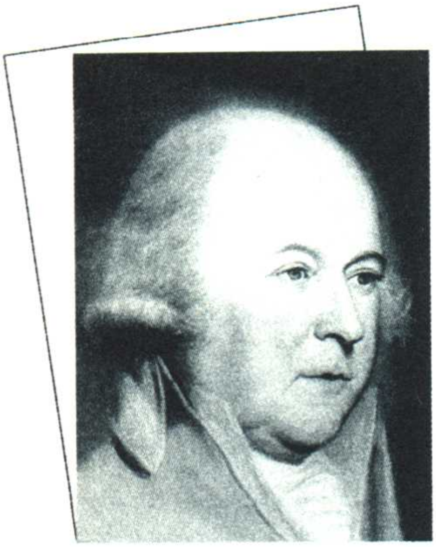
I have taken a very great fondness for reading Rollin's Ancient History since you left me. I am determined to go thro with it if possible in these my days of solitude. I find great pleasure and entertainment from it, and I have persuaded Johnny to read me a page or two every day, and hope he will from his desire to oblige me entertain a fondness for it — we have had a charming rain which lasted 12 hours and has greatly revived the dying fruits of the earth.

I want much to hear from you. I long impatiently to have you upon the stage of action. The first of September or the month of September, perhaps may be of as much importance to Great Britain as the Ides of March were to Caesar. I wish you every public as well, as private blessing, and that wisdom which is profitable both for instruction and edification to conduct you in this difficult day — the little flock remember Papa, and kindly wish to see him. So does your most affectionate.

Abigail Adams.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. tedious ['tiːdiəs] *adj.* 单调乏味的
2. quick sands 流沙
3. futurity [fjuː'tjuəriti] *n.* 未来,来世
4. leave the mind great scope 思绪万千
5. invad [in'veid] *vt.* 侵略
6. pernicious [pəː'niʃəs] *adj.* 有害的
7. patriot ['peitriət] *n.* 爱国者
8. surmount [səː'maunt] *vt.* 战胜,克服



1735—1826

约翰·亚当斯 John Adams

美国第二位总统，出生于马萨诸塞州的海湾殖民地。哈佛大学毕业后，亚当斯成为了一名律师。1776年，亚当斯参加《独立宣言》五人起草委员会，是《独立宣言》的起草人之一。在华盛顿担任总统期间，他一直任副总统。1796年，亚当斯当选为总统。但由于他任职期间在内政、外交方面均无明显建树，1800年，亚当斯在大选中败于杰斐逊。作为一位政治哲学家，亚当斯有着惊人的学问和思想。他曾说过一句名言："人民和国家只能在逆境中被创造。"毫无疑问，这是他的想法，也是美国的经验。

1774年8月19日，亚当斯收到了妻子的一封信，这是他给妻子的回信。从这封信里可以看出亚当斯对妻子的浓情与思念。

约翰·亚当斯致妻子的信

亲爱的：

我在纽约收到了你的来信，你根本无法想象它给我带来了怎样的快乐。自我离开波士顿，还没有找到一次给你写信的机会。虽然我可以通过邮局把信寄给你，但我却没有选择那种方式，因为我怕出什么差错。不过，由于我们距费城都不超过四十二英里，我希望能在那儿找人私下里为我把这封信转交给你。

我们旅程中的一些细节必须等我回来后再告诉你，恐怕趣事能写成一本书那么长。总体说来，这是一次令人愉快的旅行。我们有机会看到整个世界，并有机会在我们途经的几个殖民地与一些杰出人士会面。那里的人盛情款待了我们，而且表现出对我们的极大尊重。

我们昨天参观了纳索荷学院，学者、导师还有教授们礼貌地接待了我们。今天我们要去听他们演讲。明天我们会去劳动礼堂，万能的上帝出于高度信任赐予我们智慧和美德，我们已将这些美德发扬光大。我们所到之处都能看到人们良好的精神面貌。他们一致认为我们的事业就是他们的事业，并向我们表示了坚定不移地遵守国会各项指示的决心。

我还在为那些充满困惑和痛苦的人们感到忧虑——希望他们会被引到正确的道路上去。亲爱的，我恳求你，尽可能使自己感到安逸和平静。在这个危机四伏的年代里，只有上帝的意志在支撑着我们，我们应该以谨慎小心为原则。我最强烈的愿望就是：我们能够在将来看到一个更晴朗的天空、一个更美好的时代！

请向我们的小南比转达我亲切的爱。告诉她一定要记得给我写信，并附在你给我的回信中。我们的小约翰尼如此惹人喜爱，真令我感到高兴。告诉他，听说他给妈妈读书逗妈妈开心，我感到很高兴，他真是个懂事的孩子；告诉他不要与那些粗俗的孩子为伍；告诉他我希望在回家时能看到他对词类和词尾的变化规律都能掌握得很好。替我亲吻我的小查里和汤米。告诉他们我十一月份之前可以回家，但具体时间还不清楚。

请代我向所有问起我的朋友问好——特别是向昆西叔叔、你的父亲和家人、塔富士博士和家人问好。我希望在你孤独时撒克斯特先生能够是一个好伴侣。代我转告他，虽然现在的日子很阴暗，但在未来他的书绝不会没有销路，希望他能够全身心投入到书中。

我分别从图多尔、特朗勃和希尔那里收到了三封热情洋溢的信，使我们在长途旅行中受到了极大的鼓舞，并给我们带来了很大的帮助。

你见到威尔伯特先生、卡尔·克莱西先生和科尔·坎西先生时，请代我向他们道贺。

你一提到雨，我便顿觉精神振奋。我希望我们的农业能够得到良好的管理，希望大家能够努力工作。勤俭节约应该是我们的立足点。我们此次出行的开支一定会很大——令我们感到欣慰的是，我们是为人民的利益在辛勤劳作、不畏艰险，并花费了大量的时间——只要我们的付出有所收益，那就会是一件令人幸福的事情！

孩子们的教育问题始终让我放心不下。要使他们具有良好的品德，使他们懂得勤勉，充满活力，并富有进取精神；让他们将每一种缺点都视为耻辱和懦弱；鼓励他们要胸怀大志，将来成为栋梁之材——使他们对缺乏知识的人和一事无成的人不屑一顾；把他们的雄心壮志建立在伟大、坚定的目标之上，而不要去在意那些琐碎、毫无价值的事情。亲爱的，该是你教他们学习法语的时候了，应该让他们把礼貌、优雅和诚实时刻铭记在心。

我将沿途事件作了些记录，等我回家后拿给你看，仅供消遣。不过，我们有那么多不同的人物要去交谈，那么多的事物要去观察，所以我无法将一切

事情详细记录下来——请接受我最温馨的爱和关怀，你的流浪者。

约翰·亚当斯

1774年8月28日于新泽西普林斯镇

相关链接

亚当斯与拉丁文

亚当斯小的时候，父亲要他学拉丁文，但他对拉丁文不感兴趣，便对父亲说："我不喜欢拉丁文，能不能让我做别的事情？"父亲说："那你去挖水沟吧，牧场正需要一条水渠。"于是亚当斯真的到牧场去挖水沟，可是，拿惯笔的人拿起锹来却十分吃力，当天他就累得疲惫不堪。他咬紧牙关又坚持了一天，到了傍晚，再也熬不住了。他只好承认："疲劳压倒了我的傲气。"最后，他乖乖地回到了学拉丁文的课堂上。

John Adams to His Wife

Prince Town New Jersey
Aug. 28 th, 1774.
My Dr.,

I received your kind letter, at New York, and it is not easy for you to imagine the pleasure it has given me. I have not found a single opportunity to write since 1 left Boston, excepting by the post and I don't choose to write by that conveyance, for fear of foul play. But as we are now within forty-two miles of Philadelphia, I hope there to find some private hand by which I can convey this.

The particulars of our journey, I must reserve, to be communicated after my return. It would take a volume to describe the whole. It has been upon the whole an agreeable jaunt. We have had opportunities to see the world, and to form acquaintances with the most eminent and famous men in the several colonies we have passed through. We have been treated with unbounded civility, complaisance, and respect.

We yesterday visited Nassau Hall College, and were politely treated by the scholars, tutors, professors and president, whom we are, this day to hear preach. Tomorrow we reach the Theatre of Action. God almighty grant us wisdom and virtue sufficient for the high trust that is devolved up on us. The spirit of the people wherever we have

been seems to be very favourable. They universally consider our cause as their own, and express the firmest resolution, to abide the determination of the Congress.

I am anxious for our perplexed, distressed province — hope they will be directed into the right path. Let me intreat you, my dear, to make yourself as easy and quiet as possible. Resignation to the will of heaven is our only resource in such dangerous times. Prudence and caution should be our guides, I have the strongest hopes, that we shall yet see a clearer sky, and better times.

Remember my tender love to my little Nabby. Tell her she must write me a letter and enclose it in the next you send. I am charmed with your amusement with our little Johnny. Tell him I am glad to hear he is so good a boy as to read to his Mamma, for her entertainment, and to keep himself out of the company of rude children. Tell him I hope to hear a good account of his accidence and nomenclature, when I return. Kiss my little Charley and Tommy for me. Tell them I shall beat home by November but how much sooner I know not.

Remember me to all enquiring friends — particularly to Uncle Quincy, your Pappa and family, and Dr. Tufts and family. Mr. Thaxter, I hope, is a good companion, in your solitude. Tell him, if he devotes his soul and body to his books, I hope, notwithstanding the darkness of these days, he will not find them unprofitable sacrificesin future.

I have received three very obliging Letters, from Tudor, Trumble, and Hill. They have cheered us, in our wanderings, and done us much service.

My compliments to Mr. Wibirt and Coll, Quincy, when you see them.

Your account of the rain refreshed me. I hope our husbandry is prudently and industriously managed. Frugality must be our support. Our expenses, in this journey, will be very great — our only reward will be the consolatory reflection that we toil, spend our time, and tempt dangers for the public good — happy indeed, if we do any good!

The education of our children is never out of my mind. Train them to virtue, habituate them toindustry, activity, and spirit. Make them consider every vice, as shameful and unmanly: fire them with ambition to be useful — make them disdain to be destitute of any useful, or ornamental knowledge or accomplishment. Fix their ambition upon great and solid objects, and their contempt upon little, frivol ous, and useless ones. It is time, my dear, for you to begin to teach them French. Every decency, grace, and honesty should be inculcated upon them.

I have kept a few minutes by way of journal, which shall be your entertainment when I come home, but we have had so many persons and sovarious characters to converse with, and so many objects to view, that I have not been able to be so particular as I could wish — I am, with the tenderest affection and concern, your wandering.

John Adams



1843—1916

亨利·詹姆斯 Henry James

十九世纪美国现实主义文学的三大倡导者之一。他主张小说存在的理由是它努力地表现生活；艺术的领域应包括所有的生活、所有的感情、所有的见闻、所有的见解；现实的气氛是小说的最大优点。詹姆斯是一个多产作家，他的一生都贡献给了写作。他写的小说、故事、文学评论、剧本及传记等，总数不下一百卷，此外还有大量信件和札记。詹姆斯的代表作有《小说的艺术》，书中阐述了小说创作的许多理论和观点，迄今为止，这些看法依然被认为是无懈可击的经典之作。

这是詹姆斯旅居国外时写给国内的姐姐的一封信。

亨利·詹姆斯致姐姐的信

亲爱的姐姐：

我似乎总是隔很长一段时间才给你写信；可是我想，在这样长期通信的过程中出现这种情况是不可避免的。我正在用尽一切方法尽快打破这种沉默的局面。上封信就是我刚刚到巴黎时写给你的；我在巴黎度过了三个星期后于两天前返回。和每次一样，无论在别处玩儿得多么愉快，返回波尔顿大街后仍会使我兴奋不已。我这样说并不是说巴黎不好，我在那儿同样度过了一段短暂而美好的时光。不过，我在巴黎并没有遇到什么特别的事情，只是见了几个老朋友，看了几出新戏剧，吃了些可口的食品。我再也见不到特金涅夫了，但我见到了欧罗索夫王妃，过去我时常能够见到她。她是一位极其聪慧、好奇心极强的女人。她向我讲述了许多有关特金涅夫生命中最后一年里的生活琐事。当我从中得知自他去世后，他的妻子维克多特便开始不停地埋怨他，认为是他的无能使家庭陷入了极度的贫困时，我就不寒而栗；可事实上，他正是为了他的妻子和孩子才毁掉了自己。这一切都是令人生厌的争论。我在巴黎时，从凯特姑妈口中得知，您想再次回到纽约尝试做电工。想必你现在已经如愿以偿了，也许已经跻身于家乡的名流之列。在我看来，这是一次大胆的尝试，

希望它会成为一个巨大的成功。你与凯瑟琳的分别是一场悲剧,但是我希望你能够早日从阴影中走出来。我不会妄自猜测亲人的离去会为你带来怎样的悲痛,无论怎样,我都会为你祈祷,恐怕现实情况至少不会比你和她想象得更糟。在此,我通过巴因斯一家转达了对她的问候。她到达意大利时,也许会给我回一封信——告诉我她离开你时有关你的一些情况。我们遭遇了冬季里第一次寒潮。在这期间,邓肯·斯图尔特太太去世了。不过寒潮倒是给了人们一种耳目一新的感觉,而且有益于身心健康。可惜的是,人们口中的斯图尔特太太已成为另一个世界的人了。她是一个非常慈祥的老人,我会一直怀念她,总有一天,我会把她写入书中;我已经见到了肯布尔太太,发现她正一天天陷入绝望之中,精神已近乎崩溃,我永远也不会把她写进书中。——萨尔维尼昨晚在《奥塞罗》一剧中首次露面,我特地前去捧场。令我深感意外和沮丧的是,他在剧中高潮时的表现已远不如我去年在波士顿见到的那样使人满意。也许是因为我曾向巴黎的那些朋友吹捧过他,他似乎有意降低了原有的水平,我无法理解这其中的原由。我一定会设法与他见上一面,亲自询问此事。——我刚才收到了威廉的一张便条和一些需要我签字的文件。威廉在便条中明确告诉我说你将于14日去纽约,我希望玛丽是个能干的女佣。恐怕我这里已没有什么能够使你感到有趣的消息了。莫特小姐——一个认为生活无望的老女佣,将要嫁给陆军上校迈德梅了。这消息一定会令你感到高兴——你身上有着她根本不具备的优势。隆巴德太太在我离开巴黎时仍然病得很厉害,我给她儿子写了一封信。如果身边没有比范妮更适合照顾她的人在身边,她就应该回家。——我偶尔会收到卡丽的信,但我给她回信时却往往找不到什么话题,不过我还是会尽力而为。我会把这封信寄给凯特婶婶再转交给你。鲍勃实在太平静了,真是令人难以置信。

永远爱你的亨利

1884年2月29日于波尔顿第三西大街

Henry James to His Sister

3 Bolton St. W.

Feb 29 th, 1884.

Dearest Sister,

I seem to myself to be constantly letting longer **intervals**[1] **elapse**[2] between my let-

ters to you; but I suppose that is inevitable in a prolonged correspondence I will try and not let silence get too much ahead of speech. I wrote you last just after I had gone over to Paris; from which place I returned, after a stay of some three weeks, two days ago. I am very glad to relapse into Bolton Street as I always am, after any absence, however pleasant, and I say this without detriment to Paris, which, for short periods, is always charming to me. Nothing very particular happened to me there, But I saw my old friends and the new plays and had some excellent food. I greatly missed Turgénieff, but I saw the Princess Ouroussoff, whom I used to see a great deal of old, and who is a most clever and curious woman, and she told me various things about the last year of his life. I am much horrified to learn that since his death Mme Viardot complains of him—of his having impoverished them; whereas he ruined himself for her and her children. But these are odious discussions. While I was in Paris I heard from Aunt Kate of your intending to go on to N. Y. to try an electrician; and therefore suppose that you have achieved it and that you even no ware lodged behind some brown stone front of your native city. This sounds to me like a big attempt, and I hope it will be a big success. The drama of your separation from Katharine is well over now, I suppose; and I will not indulge in vain conjectures as to how you bear your bereavement. I pray that whatever it may be, it is at least not worse than you — or she — supposed. I am writing her a word of greeting, here, through the Barings, and she probably will send me a line — describing you, as she left you — when she arrives in Italy. — We are having the first cold of the winter and Mrs. Duncan stewart is dead. But the cold is bright and wholesome and Mrs. Stewarthad become a kind of talking melancholy ghost. She was a charming old being, however and I shall miss her much. Someday I shall put her in to a book. I have already seen Mrs. Kemble and find her constantly a little more and a little more broken and, as it were, indented. I shall never put her into a book.— Salvini made his first appearance here, last night, in Othello, and I went to see him; but to my surprise and distress hegave all the climax of the play much less finely than when I saw him a year ago in Boston, and I was proportionately taken aback, having puffed him so to some of my friends who were there. It was as if he had toned it down and weakened it deliberately, and I don't understand the mystery. I shall try and see him, and inquire. A note just comes in from William, accompanying some papers for me to sign in which he speaks definitely of your going to N.Y.on the 14th. I hope Mary will be an efficient (and effective) soubrette. I don't think I have any news that will interest you. Miss Motley(a supposedly hopeless old maid, plain and not moneyed) is to marry Colonel Mildmay. There is a sign of cheer for you — having the advantages that she lacks. Mrs. Lombard was still seriously ill when I left Paris, and I took upon myself to write to her son. She ought to come home unless she has some one with her more powerful than Fanny.— I hear everynow and then from Carrie, but it is difficult to write to her, for want of topics. But I do what I can. I shall send this to Aunt Kate to give you. Bob's quietude seems almost too good to be true. Ever your affectionate.

Henry.



奥格登·纳什致女儿的信

作者简介 1902—1971

奥格登·纳什

Ogden Nash

美国荒诞诗歌的大师。他的诗风非常独特，作品有时数行，有时只有寥寥数字；或以巧妙的押韵结尾，或以荒诞的韵脚收行。很多时候，他甚至创造一个词来满足押韵的要求。纳什对二十世纪的美国洞察深刻，见解精辟，曾被《大西洋月刊》称为"上帝赐予美国的礼物"，其实他的作品在全世界都具有很大的影响力，不仅幽默诙谐，还能让人体会到人生经验的真谛。其代表作有诗集《艰难的诗行》等。

本文是纳什写给女儿的信。在信中，他详细地向他的的孩子们介绍了巴黎的风景，甚至从字里行间透露出一个儿童才有的天真。他的性格也许就像他的诗作一样，随意、率真而自然。

我可爱的女儿们：

我真希望你们都陪伴在我身边，下次一定把你们也带来，所以，你们要记得多注意学习礼节、吃各类食物的方式。巴黎有许多孩子，还有许多公园，而且，每天都有成群的孩子在公园里骑自行车、滑旱冰，或者踢足球、玩其他一些游戏；虽然巴黎人几乎每人都养着一只狗，但没有一只狗像斯潘格那样漂亮。美丽的塞纳河刚好从市中心穿过。我曾经和你们的妈妈数过，河上一共有二十二座桥。难道你们不觉得在这里会感到非常有趣吗？和法国的成年人一样，这里的孩子也都很懂礼貌，你们一定喜欢和他们一起玩耍。所以，利内尔，你必须认真学习法语，这样才能进步更快；到了法国后，才能更好地理解法文，你也可以将自己学到的东西教给伊莎贝尔。

这里有许多有趣的东西可以看。巴黎是一座古老的城市，今天我和你们的妈妈在游览时看到了一处非常美丽的建筑。它是由罗马人于一千六百年前建造的，名为克卢尼。我们也去参观了卢浮——宫这个收藏全世界最美丽的绘画和雕塑作品的博物馆；许多年前，法国历代国王和王后都曾经住在那里，直到法国人民群情激愤发动了起义，砍掉了国王和王后的头。

今天下午，我们一同去了一座美丽的大教堂，它座落在塞纳河河心的一座岛屿上。教堂名为巴黎圣母院，意思是我们的圣母教堂，它已有九百多年的历史。教堂非常高，以至于人们几乎看不到它的顶部。教堂的窗户全部为有色玻璃制成，有红色、蓝色、黄色和紫色。正是因为这样，透过玻璃折射到墙上的光影就如同彩虹一样美丽。七百年前，这里有一位非常圣明的国王，后来成为圣路易，他就被埋在那里。告诉迪莉娅，我们已经在那里替你们每个人给圣母玛丽亚献上了一支蜡烛，而且我们会从那里为她带回一本玫瑰经。之后，我和你们的妈妈一同爬上了高塔，当我们到达塔顶时，感到非常疲惫，但同时又觉得十分有趣。——一些怪兽状的滴水石刻正对着我们。从这里俯瞰巴黎，觉得它特别美丽。——我们可以从这里看到一段绵延数英里的河流，还能清楚地看到河上的小桥，以及可爱的古建筑。这里比国内暖和些，但有时会烟雾弥漫，这样的天气，就连出租车司机也会迷路。昨晚，有三辆出租车同时开进了位于切普斯·艾利瑟斯街的街心喷泉池中，博普会给你们讲述这件事情。我想，当时坐在出租车上的乘客一定浑身湿漉漉的，非常不舒服。

我想，你们一定会喜欢法国的火车。我们乘着火车从哈佛到了巴黎。那列火车与加斯顿和约瑟芬去美国时乘坐的那列十分相似。火车开动时，引擎发出“吱吱”声，而不是“嘟嘟”声，而且服务员都非常有礼貌。

你们也一定会喜欢巴黎的船。我们乘坐的船上有一个小剧院，每天下午为孩子们演出木偶剧，而且甲板上还有足够的空间让孩子们玩耍、做游戏。有时会突然刮起大风，海面顿时波涛汹涌，船身也会有些摇晃，但我却认为这样非常有趣，就像荡秋千一样。与我们同路的一个年仅十四岁的小姑娘因为小提琴拉得特别好，所以很有名气。她的名字叫吉拉·布斯塔波。在一次晚间举办的节日音乐会上，她为我们演奏，我们每个人都被她的音乐所感动，都为一位老水手捐出了一些钱。法国水手们脸色都十分红润，说话也很快。我始终觉得他们永远不会变老。事实上，我无法肯定那些钱最终落到了哪个人的手里。

我还想告诉你们的就是，无论你们何时沿着塞纳河河岸走，都会看见许多老人手握着长长的鱼竿在那里钓鱼。等你们来到这边时，我们也可以去试试，也许我们会在那里捕到一条。

我爱你们，亲爱的女儿，记得想我。

爸爸

1939年2月6日

相关链接

《学术涂鸦》是纳什的一部诗集。在这部诗集里,他说布莱克不懂牛顿和培根;歌德的头发如果掉光了就显得更简洁了;写勃朗宁则用了双关语,说他脸红时,他的狗就会向他摇尾巴,因为那狗的名字也有脸红的意思;对于但丁,纳什确是很尊敬,但也不时地暗示出他和那位永恒的女性关系如此如此;说哈代从不迟到;赫伯特在餐厅连个果汁都不会叫;蒲柏老想给自己写一行墓志铭;罗塞蒂喝了哥哥给的鸦片茶竟然还觉得不错等等,都是在大肆嘲弄自己的同行。

Ogden Nash to His Daughter

February 6, 1939.

My sweet girls,

I wish so that you were here with us. The next time we must surely bring you along, so remember to practice your manners and learn to eat all sorts of food. Paris is full of children. There are lots of parks, and every park is full of boys and girls on bicycles and roller skates, or playing football and other games all day long. Also, I think everybody in Paris has a dog, but none of them are as pretty as Spangle. A beautiful river, the Seine, runs right through the middle of the city, and Mummy and I have already counted 22 bridges that cross it. Don't you think that you could have fun here? The French children are very polite, as everyone is in France, and I am sure you would enjoy playing with them; so, Linell, you must pay great attention to your French teacher and learn very fast, in order to be able to understand well when you come here. You might teach I sabel some of what you learn, too.

There are many, many interesting things tosee here. Paris is a very old city, and today Mummy and I saw a beautiful building, that was started by the Romans more than 1 600 years ago. It is called Cluny. We have also been to the Louvre, a museum now full of the most beautiful paintings and statues;but years ago the kings and queens of France used to live there, until the French people got angry with them and chopped off their heads.

This afternoon we went to a beautiful cathedral on an island in the middle of the river. Itis called the Cathedral of NÔ?tre Dame, which means the cathedral of Our Lady the Virgin. It is more than 900 years old, and so high that you can hardly see the

top. The windows are of gorgeous stained glass, red and blue and yellow and greenand purple, so that they cast light like a rain bowon the walls. A very good king of France who lived 700 years ago and later became Saint Louis was buried (from)there. Tell Delia that we offered acandle to the Virgin Mary for each of you there, and that we are bringing her back a rosary from there also. Mummy and I climbed the tower later. We were very tired when we got to the top, but it was interesting. Some hideous stone gargoyles were looking right into our faces, so we looked down at Paris lying at our feet, and it was beautiful. We could see miles of river, and the bridges and the lovely old buildings. — It is warmer here than at home, but sometimes the fog is so thick that even the taxi drivers get lost; last night three of them ran right off the street and into the fountains on the Rond Point on the Champs Elysees, which Boppy can tell you about. It must have been very damp and uncomfortable for the passengers.

I think you would like the French trains. We rode on one from Le Havre to Paris just like the one that Gaston et Joséphine took when they were leaving for America. When the engine whistles it says tweet instead of toot toot, and the porters are very polite.

You would like the boat, too. There is a little theatre where there are puppet shows for children every afternoon, and there is plenty of room to run and play on the decks. Sometimes, when the wind blows hard and the sea is rough, the boat joggles alittle bit, but that is good fun, like being in a swing. On our trip there was a little girl only 14 years old who is already famous because she plays the violin so beautifully; her name is Guila Bustabo, and she played for us one night, at the gala concert, where everybody gave money to help the old sailors. French sailors have very pink cheeks indeed, and speak very fast, and I don't think they ever get old. really, so I am not surewho got the money.

I must tell you that whenever you walk along the banks of the Seine you see dozens of old men fishing with long, long poles. I don't think they ever catch anything, but they have a lovely time thinking about what they might catch just supposing there were any fish there. We'll try it when you come here with us; perhaps we'll catch the first fish ever to be caught there.

I adore you both, my darlings, and don't forget me

Daddy



作者简介

艾温·布鲁克斯·怀特

E. B. White

美国著名的散文家、儿童文学作家。1921年毕业于纽约康纳尔大学。怀特是位多产作家，写有小说、诗歌、评论和随笔，但他更擅长的是儿童文学，其中主要作品是三部中篇童话：《精灵鼠小弟》、《夏洛的网》和《哑天鹅的故事》。这三部童话都以动物为主人公，用拟人的手法把幽默风趣的想象与现实生活的场景融为一体，新颖而别致；并从这些小动物身上看到人世间的真善美。由于语言通俗流畅、主人公形像生动逼真、情节扣人心弦，使得这三部作品赢得广泛赞誉，一直被公认为是美国文学宝库中屈指可数的儿童文学佳作。

这封信是怀特在母亲和父亲结婚四十二周年之际写给母亲的，表达了他对母亲的崇敬与爱戴。

艾温·布鲁克斯·怀特致母亲的信

亲爱的妈妈：

我希望您能于4月27日——您与父亲结婚四十二周年纪念日那天收到这封信。不过，像往常一样，我的信寄得晚了些。我前几天在曼斯菲尔德那里收到了您的信，是从东奥洛拉转来的。我记得曾在某封信里向您提起过，寄给我的信可以通过住在奥洛拉公园路一百五十九号的库什曼先生转交给我。

四十年来您一直如此快乐，
整整四十二年——
一路上洒满了笑声和泪水。
四十年来您一直如此快乐，
这样的快乐，人们很少会听到，
我要把我的爱献给您。
四十年来您是如此快乐，
整整四十二年了。

我们上周星期一刚刚一同离开东奥洛拉，没想到一周后我又开始给您写信了。我们在库什曼家一直待到了复活节，并在罗伊克罗夫特家里吃了复活节晚餐。第二天我们就离开了，

大家背上背着铺盖,像极了乌龟,我们迈着欢快的步子出了城……

春天来临时,我们来到了俄亥俄州。那里地势平坦,一群红猪在翠绿的田野上奔跑着。农场里,一切都井然有序,一片繁荣景象——与纽约农场大不相同。我们驱车向前,穿过了许多村庄和城市——那些村庄和城市的名字我们从来未曾听说过。那里完全是典型的中西部地区,最年长的居者长常常站在一处,手捋着长长的白色胡须;铁匠铺的门通常都开着,可以听到里面传出的铁砧声;村里的一些妙龄女子常沿着大街在一群照看药店的年轻人面前来回走动着;不远处,时常可以看到一个家庭主妇打扫门廊,或时而将一锹锹肥料运到花园里去。黄昏时分,这里呈现出一片迷人的田园风光——您只能在电影里才能见到的那种,简直如梦如幻。羊群沿着绿色草场飘然来访;白杨树将无数的阴影投在草地上。羊群已飘过来了,它们停在白李子树花下,就像一尊尊雕像。沿着一望无尽的乡间小路向田野看去,一辆福德牌拖拉机像一只蜗牛一样慢慢地向前爬行。紫丁香盛开了,熏衣草和铁树的花儿把乡间的小路装点得五彩缤纷。

在到达加利弗尼亚之前,我不准备再吸烟了。这难道不是一个好主意吗?库什曼认为这主意不错。我也希望能够快点穿上干净的衬衫,它们简直要比香烟还要糟糕,我只剩下一件可以穿的衬衫了。

福特牌汽车开销极大。自我们离开纽约后,单单是维修就用去了七十五美分——五十美分修理炸裂的水箱,二十五美分修理鼓风机皮带。这开销的确不小啊!

纽约堪称公路之州,在这里行驶需要交通行费。这里的路一边是水泥路,一边是泥土路。当你的车与另一辆车相遇时,假如其中一辆车刚好在水泥路这一边,那还不成问题;可是,如果其中一辆在泥土路这边,想转向水泥路上行驶,就很有可能会使车轮下陷。这样一来,你就不得不下车,想办法把你的车抬回路上,这就是为什么我的福特车能去的地方对于重型车来说就有一定困难的原因。无论何时,当你的福特车有抛锚的迹象,你都能够把它弄到该去的地方。

请您告诉父亲,如果他想在生活中寻找一些乐趣的话,就应该去读一读本奇利的《万花筒》一书。几天前,我曾在曼斯菲尔德看到过它。它与当今市面上流行的许多东西一样有趣,当然,要除去库什曼·怀特的旅行游记,那实在太令人倒胃口了。

我们计划于星期五早晨到肯塔基。不过,我们身处的地方如此美丽,真想

再多待些日子，去更好地了解它。在您结婚四十二周年纪念日之际，我再次向您表示祝贺，祝您能够在大西洋城度过一个愉快的蜜月。请代我向父亲问好——告诉他，我已经收到了他的来信，谢谢您。几天前，我把那张便条寄到了曼斯菲尔德的信托公司。

您的安迪

1922年4月26日于俄亥俄州哥伦布俄亥俄州大学

相关链接

《精灵鼠小弟》是艾温·布鲁克斯·怀特的代表作之一，内容讲的是纽约一对夫妇生下一个仅有老鼠那么大的孩子。他的名字叫斯图尔特。正因为他长得小，所以能够做一些常人做不了的事。当然，也因为长得小而闯了不少祸。他心地善良，为了寻找一只被猫吓走的小鸟朋友，竟不顾艰难万险去外面去寻找，并坚信一定要找到朋友。可以看得出，这是一篇以追求为主旨的故事，希望人们能拥有一颗追求美好生活的心。这部童话自出版以来一直深受小读者的欢迎。1999年，这个童话被改编成电影，由真人和一只电脑制作的小老鼠合演，并取得了轰动性的成功。

E. B. White to His Mother

Beta Theta Pi house
Ohio State University
Columbus, Ohio,26 April 1922.
Dearest Mum,

I am hoping this will arrive on April 27 to greet you on your 42nd wedding **anniversary**[1], but I am a little late in starting it as usual. Your letter reached me at Mansfield, O. a couple of days ago where it was forwarded from East Aurora. I guess I told you in one of my previous letters that the way to reach me by mail is via 159 Park Place, East Aurora. Mr. Cushman does the forwarding.

So you've been gay[2] for forty years
For forty years and two—

Been jolly all through smiles and tears
So you've been gay for forty years:
A thing one very seldom hears.
I send my love to you.
So you've been gay for forty years
For forty years and two.

I hardly think I have written you since we left East Aurora a week ago Monday in the afternoon. We remained over Easter at the Cushmans and had Easter Sunday dinner at the Roycroft. The next day we left, **clanking**[3] merrily out of town with our bed upon our back as goes the **turtle**[4]…

Spring has arrived in **Ohio**[5]. This is a flat state where red pigs graze in bright green fields and where farms are neat and **prosperous**[6] — not like New York farms. We roll along through dozens of villages and cities whose names we never heard. They are **typical of the middle west**[7]. The oldest in**habitant**[8] is generally standing somewhere **pulling a long white beard**[9], the smithy door is generally open and the sound of the anvil to be heard, the village flapper is generally flapping up and down along Main Street in front of a group of job less youths who help hold the drug store up, and somewhere there is always a housewife sweeping off a porch or carrying a spadeful of manure to the garden. Toward evening the country scenes become idyllic — the sort of thing you have seen in the **moving pictures**[10] and never quite believed in. Sheep come drifting up long green **lawns**[11] where poplars throw **interminable**[12] shadows, come drifting up and stand like statues beneath white **plum**[13] blossoms, while far down the lane and off in the fields a little Ford tractor moves like a snail across the furrows. Lilacs are in full bloom and the lavender iron-wood blossoms are coloring all the roads.

I've given up cigarettes until I get to California. Isn't that a good idea? Cush thinks it's great. I also am looking forward soon to giving up clean shirts. They're worse than cigarettes. I'm on my last one now.

The Ford is a tremendous expense. Repairshave cost up 75 cents since we left New York — 50 cents for a **busted radiator**[14] and 25 cents for a fanbelt. Pretty heavy going.

New York is the state for roads. Here there are pikes, which are cement on one side and dirt on the other. When you meet another car if you areon the **cement**[15] side all is well, and when you are on the dirt side you steer to one side, sink down indefinitely, and then get out and lift the car backonto the road again. That's why Fords can go places where heavyer cars have difficulty. Whenever your Ford shows signs of weakening, you can lift it back where it belongs.

Tell Father he ought to read Benchley's Of All Things if he wants a good time. I

read it the other day in Mansfield. It's about as funny as anything there is on the market today with the exception, of course, of the Cushman-White travelogues which are simply killing.

We'll be leaving for Kentucky on Friday morning. This place is so beautiful we want to stay for a day or so to become acquainted with it.

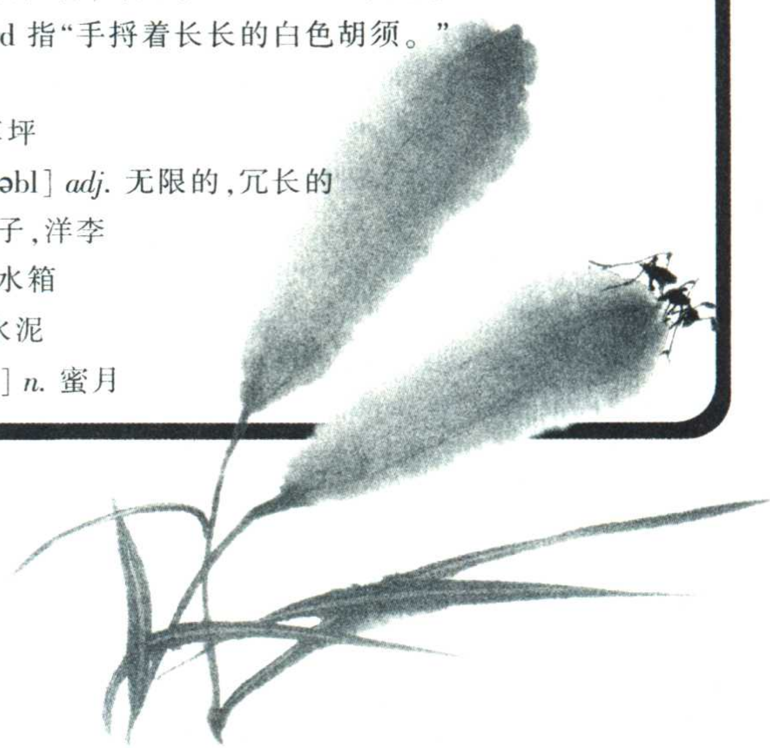
Congratulations again on your anniversary. Have a good time at Atlantic City **honeymooning**[16]. Love to father — tell him I received his letter and thank yon. I mailed the slip to the Trust Company the other day in Mansfield.

Yours

Andy.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. anniversary [ˌæniˈvəːsəri] *n.* 周年纪念
2. gay [ɡei] *adj.* 快乐的
3. clank [klæŋk] *n.* 叮当声 *v.* (使)发出叮当声
4. turtle [ˈtəːtl] *n.* 海龟
5. Ohio [əuˈhaiəu] *n.* 俄亥俄州(美国州名)
6. prosperous [ˈprɔspərəs] *adj.* 繁荣的
7. typical of the middle west "典型的中西部地区"
8. habitant [ˈhæbitənt] *n.* 居住者,与文中"inhabitant"同意。
9. pulling a long white beard 指"手捋着长长的白色胡须。"
10. moving pictures 电影
11. lawn [lɔːn] *n.* 草地,草坪
12. interminable [inˈtəːminəbl] *adj.* 无限的,冗长的
13. plum [plʌm] *n.* [植]李子,洋李
14. busted radiator 炸裂的水箱
15. cement [siˈment] *n.* 水泥
16. honeymoon [ˈhʌnimuːn] *n.* 蜜月





约翰·奥哈拉致女儿的信

作者简介

1905—1970

约翰·奥哈拉

John O'hara

美国著名小说家,生于宾夕法尼亚州,早年命运多舛,后来成为在纽约市的一名记者,撰写文艺批评、短篇小说等,还为好莱坞和百老汇改编电影和戏剧。从第一部长篇小说《在萨马拉的约会》到死后出版的短篇小说集《萨马拉好人及其他小说》为止,奥哈拉的作品是二十世纪二十至四十年代积极上进的美国社会史。作为现实主义作家,他的作品风格客观,而且实事求是,深受读者的认可与欣赏。

1

亲爱的女儿:

我一直在回想我们昨晚的谈话,希望你也如此。

从某种程度上来说,1962年对于威利·奥哈拉是起着决定性作用的一年。你今年所做出的决定对你几年后再次做出决定起着至关重要的作用。

比如:当你到了二十岁,或二十一岁的时候,你会发现你很想参加联邦政府,或州政府为年轻人组织的某项活动。那么,主办机构首先需要了解的就是你曾受过何种教育和培训。如今,各行各业用人的最低标准是受过两年的大学教育——要么在四年制大学里学习,要么在两年制大学里学习。

再举一个例子:你说过你不想在二十三岁以前结婚。可是,这并不是你能左右的事情。不过,假如你果真等到了二十三岁,假如你的未婚夫是在某个大学里读研究生的年轻人,他的专业可能是法律、医学、理科、行政管理等等。——你和他住在他的研究所附近。那时,也许你会希望自己也能上大学或读研

究生。不过我敢肯定，如果你在二十三岁时才成为一名大学新生，那么你可能根本没有热情去学习。

现在我必须说得多一些，但我的目的是：我希望你能够非常非常严肃地考虑一下，从圣·蒂姆斯中学毕业后你将做什么这一问题。你不是富家小姐，将来也不会是一个一贫如洗的姑娘，但你必须要考虑一下怎样才能挣到属于自己的那部分生活费。我想，你绝不会爱上一个傻瓜；我认为，不论这个傻瓜是穷是富，他都会使你极其厌烦；因此，你爱上的男孩儿一定会是个凭借智慧来谋生的人。这就意味着，他会读研究生，或是接受大学毕业后的某些培训；并且，即使你想婚后立即生子，也必定希望能够与他才智相当。

我可以依据自己的阅历告诉你，娶到一个可以自食其力的妻子有多么重要。我的第一个妻子是威尔斯利大学的学士兼哥伦比亚大学的硕士。在我看来，他们这些人都是被认为最有能力的人。虽然你母亲并没有上过大学，但她自身是有能力去上大学的。西斯特和你母亲都毕业于名牌中学，并且都在哥伦比亚大学进修过，而且你母亲甚至还在无需注册的情况下在牛津大学听过课。你母亲和西斯特都酷爱读书，西斯特会说多种语言。你母亲和西斯特都不喜欢女子大学，但这并不意味着她们不喜欢高等教育，她们只是不喜欢三十年前那种女大学生受教育的方式。这种方式现在已经几乎消失了。因此，如今像你母亲和西斯特那样的女孩儿，都在申请读大学，人人都去读大学。

现在，我所考虑的是：你为自己所制定的暂时计划，在我看来无论是在1962年、1963年，或是其他任何时候都是不太现实的。我希望你能够改变原计划，去一所好大学学习。这样，你的履历表上就会有受过两年大学教育的最低标准了。三年后，你便有资格去找工作，或继续学习，并获得学位。你绝对不会因为你的履历表上有这两年而后悔的，相反，你极有可能因为履历表上缺少了这两年而追悔莫及。作为你的父亲，我有责任向你指出这一切。可是，一旦我为你指明了这一切，我就必须把最终的决定权留给你。

爱你的爸爸

1962年1月7日星期日于普林斯顿

2

亲爱的：

好了，我们到了——但不是到这儿。你在圣·蒂姆斯，西斯特在普林斯顿，

而我在奎基。对你而言，崭新的一年已经开始了，对我也是如此。我总是带着一种如春机盎然般的激情走近秋季；所有事物都会令我感到兴奋——新剧目、新书、新服装等等。与此同时，秋天是一个美丽而忧郁的季节，这很难用言语来表达。我喜欢黄昏，喜欢那像火一样红红的叶子，喜欢那屋里的灯光。

对你而言，至关重要的一年已经开始了。事实上，从许多方面来讲，这都是你最重要的一年。你就要满十八岁了，而且即将面临着中学毕业。在过去的一周里我还叫你"小孩子"，但在潜意识里，我这样做是因为你的少年时代已经过去，或正在逝去。我猜想着，也许你正在经历着初恋。无论在这一过程中发生什么，只要有了初恋的经历，你便再也不是小孩子了。

作为一个孩子，身边的许多事情都是美好的——你仍然是个——孩子。你所得到的要远远比失去的多。你会得到人们的理解与欣赏，以及你对自身的欣赏。你将明白我常对你讲的那句话所隐含的智慧：要真诚地对待自己。每一年的这个时候我都会对你重复这句话，如今，距你把这句话告诉你的孩子也为时不远了。也许这是我能够给你的最好的一条建议。

你做得很好，我非常满意，并不只是因为你所做的事，更是因为你对自身的认识。就像芬尼根小姐对西斯特所说的那样——"威利反应敏捷"。因此，希望你在中学的最后一年一切顺利，并希望你永远记住，我这个老人非常爱你。

永远爱你的爸爸

1962年9月16日星期日于奎基长岛

3

亲爱的女儿：

你把这张支票忘在了起居室的桌子上。当你想到津贴的时候，一定很快就能想起这张支票。我当时是在书房填好这张支票后拿出来给你的，因为你第二天去纽约的时候会用到它。

这张支票的数额比我当年读寄宿学校时任何一年的全年津贴都要多。在1963年，这个数额相当于卖掉一千本书，再扣除税费后所能得到的全部版税。它几乎是我在《民权先驱报》当记者时每月工资的两倍，而我当时正是靠着这份工资生活。也就是说，我用这份工资支付包括衣、食、住、行，以及娱乐等所有费用，我并没有额外的收入。因此，你对这二百七十五美元如此不屑的态度令我大为失望。

我想，对你而言，今年的生活应该是多姿多彩的，我希望你能过得愉快，但无论怎样，我都希望你做事之前能够经过深思熟虑。花在你身上的每一分钱，以及你亲自花掉的每一分钱，都是我辛辛苦苦挣来的。我从没有动用过你母亲和你祖母留下来的一分钱。比如：你买的小汽车，用光了我售出四部关于纽约人的小说所得的税后收入；你在本内特一年就会花掉我售出《一个家庭聚会》所得到的全部税后收入。

正如我所告诉你的那样，在作家之中，我是比较富有的，但这并不意味着所有作家都能挣到这么多钱。我之所以能够做到这一切，除了因为我有这个能力之外，更是因为我的辛勤工作。在你欢度美好时光时，我希望你能偶尔静下心来想一想，自己所用的钱是从哪里来的。这样做并不仅仅因为那些钱来自我的辛勤工作，更因为它对你树立独立的经济地位观起着决定性的作用。在你毕业后，就要面临参加工作、去挣工资的情况。到一月份我就五十九岁了，如果说我还能够继续这样辛勤工作，挣同样多的钱，那纯粹是自欺欺人。我从来不会欺骗自己。等到你二十一岁的时候，将会继承一笔钱，但正如我时常告诫你的，这笔钱不足以使你成为一个富家小姐，更无法像个富家小姐那样过着奢华的生活。现在我让你尽情享受欢乐时光，那是因为你年龄还小，正是享受欢快的时候。可是，如果我没能让你认识到现实生活的严峻，那么对你而言将没有任何益处。在这些严峻的现实中，有一条就是如何使用金钱。另外一条就是，无论在你结婚之前，还是在你结婚之后，你都应该工作。你身边大多数的朋友我都非常喜欢，但是你不能养成这样的习惯，以为我像他们之中某些人的父亲一样富有，那并不符合现实。我一年的收入与你将得到的你母亲的遗产的数目一样多。而且，你只能得到你祖母的托管金，而本金是留给你的子女的。

我希望你能够在现阶段，以及以后的几个月中考虑考虑你的未来，想一想你将来想要一份什么样的工作，和什么样的人结婚，你能为你们的婚姻做些什么，甚至还要考虑一下你的子女将来的幸福。我保证，如果你能够多想想这些，一定比你漫无目的地享乐更加愉快。

爱你的爸爸

1963年星期日于普林斯顿

John O'hara to His Daughter

1

Princeton,7th January 1962, Sunday

My dear,

I have been thinking about our conversation of last night, and I hope you have too.

1962, in some ways, is Wylie O'hara's Year of Decision. Some of the decisions you make this year will have an important bearing on decisions you may want to make several years hence.

For example: suppose that when you are 20 or 21 you should discover that you want to participate in one of the many activities that will be open to young people in the federal or state government. The first thing they will want to know is what education and/or training you have had Nowadays the **minimum**[1], absolute minimum requirement for hundreds of jobs is two years'college, either at afour-year-college or at a junior college.

For another example: you have said that you don't expect to marry before you are 23. Well, that is something you can't be sure of, but suppose you do wait till you're 23. Suppose your fiancé-husband is a young man who is taking graduate work at some university — law, medicine, the sciences, government work, etc. —and you and he are living in the **vicinity**[2] of his graduate school. You may want to do work on the college or the graduate school level yourself, but I assure you you will not be very **enthusiastic**[3] about it if you have to start as a freshman of 23.

Now I could go on at some length, but the point I am aiming at it this: I want you to think very, very seriously about what you are going to do after St. Tim's. You are not Miss Rich bitch. You are not going to be Miss Church mouse, either, but you must think **in terms**[4] of being able to earn at least part of your own living. I don't think you are going to fall in love with a dumbhead. I think adumbhead, rich or not, would bore the hell out of you. Therefore it is extremely likely that the kind of boy you will like and fall in love with is going to be one who uses his brains to earn his living. That almost **automatically**[5] means that he will be taking either graduate work or special post-college training of some sort. And even if you have children right away, you will want to keep up with him intellectually.

I can tell you from my own experience how important it is to have a wife with whom to discuss one's work. My first wife was a Wellesley B. A. and a Columbia M. A. and a **diplomat**[6], I think they are called, at the Sorbonne. Your mother did not go

to college, but she could have. Sister And your mother both graduated from good schools and took courses at **Columbia**[7] and your mother even attended lectures at Oxford without having toen roll there. Both your mother and Sister loved toread and read a great deal, and Sister is **multilingual**[8]. Both your mother and Sister disliked women' s colleges, but they did not dislike higher learning. They formed their dislike of college-girl types thirty years ago. The type has almost vanished, because the kind of girl your mother and Sister were then would be applying for college today. Everybody goes to college.

Now this is what's on my mind: the tentative program you have outlined for yourself does not seem to me very"realistic"in 1962 and 1963 and soon. I am hopeful that you will redirect yourself toward a good college so that you will get thosetwo minimum-requirement years on your record and then be able, three years from now, to qualify for jobs or continue working for a degree. You will not regret having those two years on your record, whereas you might easily regret not having them. As your father I have a duty to point these things out to you. But once I have done that I have to leave the real decision up to you.

Love Dad

2

TLS, 1 p. Mrs. Doughty

Quogue, Long Island,16 September 1962, Sunday

My dear,

Well, here we are — but not here. You at St. Tim's, Sister in Princeton, and me in Quogue, and another **brand new**[9] year is about to **start for**[10] you. For me, too. I always seem to approach the autumn in the frame of mind that spring induces in most people. The excitement of new things;the newplays, the new books, new clothes, etc. , etc. , etc. At the same time the autumn for me is a season of a sweet **melancholy**[11] that is hard to explain. I love the early evenings, the leaves burning, the lights in houses.

It is the beginning of a big year for you, in many respects your biggest so far. By the time June **comes around**[12] you will be 18, and graduating from school. In the past week or so I have called you "Kid" but **subconsciously**[13] I have been doing that because your kid days are over, or just about. I suspect that you are going through the experience of first love, and no matter what else happens, after that experience you are never a kid again.

Most of the nice things we **associate with**[14] being a kid are okay — while you are still a kid. But you gain more than you lose. You gain in understanding, in

appreciation of people, in understanding and appreciation of yourself. You begin to see the wisdom in that **quotation**[15] I have so often repeated to you: to thine own self be true. Every year at this time I have repeated that quotation to you, and the time is not really too far distant when you will be passing it on to your own children. It is probably the best single piece of advice I can give you, or you can give them.

You have done well, and I am pleased with you, not only for what you have done, but for what you are. As Miss Finnegan said to Sister, "Wylie has the right reactions." So good luck in your Senior Year, and always know that the old man loves you very much.

Always Dad

3

Princeton,1963, Sunday

My dear,

You left this cheque on the table in the living room. You will recall that as soon as you asked for your allowance, I went to my study and wrote out the cheque and brought it in and gave it to you, because you were going to need it the next day in New York.

This cheque is for a larger amount than my entire allowance any year that I was in boarding school. In 1963 it represents approximately the royalty after taxes on the sale of nearly 1000 books. It is almost twice as much as I earned as are porter on the Herald Tribune, and I supported myself on that salary. That is, I paid for all my room, board, clothes, and fun on that salary. I had no other income. I therefore take a rather dim view of your casual attitude toward a cheque for $275.

This is, I suppose, your swinging year, and I want you to have a good time. Nevertheless I want you from time to time to give mature thought to certain matters. Every cent, every single cent, that is spent on you, and that you spend, comes out of money that I have earned by hard, hard work. Not one single cent of your mother's or grandmother's money had been touched. Your car, for instance, cost me as much money as I have, after taxes, from the sale of four New Yorker stories. Your year at Bennett will have cost me as much as I netted, aftertaxes, on the sale of a family party.

As authors go, I am, as I told you, a rich man. But there are not many authors who make nearlyas much money as I do, and I do it because I am good and because I work very hard. In the midst of your good time I want you to stop and think once in a while about where the money comes from; not only because it has come from my hard work, but because it is absolutely necessary for you yourself to get some perspective on your own financial position. When you have finished your education you are going to

have to go to work, to earn a salary. I will be 59 in January, and it is just kidding myself to think that I can go on working this handand earning this kind of money, and I do not often kid myself. At 21 you will be coming into some money, but as I have often told you, it is not going to be enough to make you Miss Richbitch or to permit you to live as Miss Richbitch. I am letting you have a good time now, because this is the time to have it, when you are young. But I would be doing you no favor if I failed to remind you of the hard realities. One of the hardest realities is money and the handling of it. Another is the fact that until you marry, and possibly even after, you are going to be a working-girl I am very fond of most of your friends, but you must not get into the habit of taking for granted that I am as rich as some of their fathers. I'm not. I have earned as much in one year as you will inherit from your mother's estate. And you will only get the income from your grandmother's trust fund; the principal is held intrust for your children.

Now, and during the months ahead, I want youto direct your thoughts toward your own future, the kind of work you want to do, the kind of manyou want to marry, the contributions you can make to your marriage, and the future well being of your children. I assure you that if you do this you will enjoy yourself more than if you enjoy yourself aimlessly.

Love, Dad

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. minimum ['minimәm] *adj.* 最小的,最低的 *n.* 最小值,最小化
2. vicinity [vi'siniti] *n.* 邻近,附近,接近
3. enthusiastic [inˌθjuːzi'æstik] *adj.* 热心的,热情的
4. in terms 在谈判中,协商中
5. automatically [ɔːtә'mætikli] *adv.* 自动地,机械地
6. diplomat ['diplәmæt] *n.* 外交官,有外交手腕的人
7. Columbia [kә'lʌmbiә] *n.* 哥伦比亚
8. multilingual ['mʌlti'liŋgwәl] *adj.* 使用多种语言的
9. brand new 崭新,全新
10. start for 原有动身去某处的意思,文中指"新的一年正等着你"。
11. melancholy ['melәnkәli] *n.* 忧郁 *v.* 忧郁
12. come around 回来
13. subconscious ['sʌb'kɔnʃәs] *adj.* 下意识的
14. associate with 联合
15. quotation [kwәu'teiʃәn] *n.* 引用语,价格,行情表



作者简介
1835—1910
马克·吐温
Mark Twain

美国著名作家、美国批判现实主义文学的奠基人、世界著名的短篇小说大师。他的代表作有长篇小说《镀金时代》、《哈克贝里·费恩历险记》以及《傻瓜威尔逊》等。海明威曾经说:"美国的整个现代文学,都发源于一本书,它的名字就是《哈克贝里·费恩历险记》。"马克·吐温在四十年的创作生涯中,写出了十多部长篇小说、几十部短篇小说及其他体裁的作品。他的文章充满了喜悦、冒险、进取、轻快、幽默的意味,最能代表美国的民族性,因而被称为"幽默大师"、"美国文学中的林肯"。

以下是两封马克·吐温写给未婚妻的信,当时大作家正处于热恋之中,讽刺和嘲笑的写作风格至此已完全不见踪影,剩下的只有对他的"莉维"的爱恋。从此信中,人们可以窥见马克·吐温温情脉脉的一面。

马克·吐温致妻子的信

1

亲爱的莉维:

今天早晨你好吗?估计现在是上午九点半,所以我还没有起床。我刚刚睡醒,一睁开眼睛,第一件事自然而然就想起了你。我打算躺到中午再起床。

我给我们的妈妈写了一封信——如果她允许我这样称呼她的话——而且信已经寄出去了。倘若能把信收回来,我一定会重新写一遍。我知道,如果让这封信"尽情表达"它自己的话,它一定不会用这样正式的格式。有时我会忘记这样一个事实:我实际上不是给她,而是在给公众写信。因此,我总是详尽阐述那些无足轻重的事,而对那些需要特别强调的事却只是一带而过。可是你知道吗?如果我总是把公众放在心里,那种被外人询问或盘问个人隐私的压迫感会让我根本无法写作。很难想象你竟可以写出或承认你那些最细微、隐私的事情,来供陌生人阅读,被人指指点点,或成为那些幸灾乐祸之人茶余饭后的谈资。因此,也许是出于本能的冲动(尽管我还没有真正意识到自己是否有这样的冲动),我刻意去隐瞒,而无法做到知无不言,言

无不尽。我并不认为我会比与我身处同样处境的人更敏感。

我在费尔班克斯夫人那里定做了戒指，并告诉她用快件给我邮到艾尔米拉，这样我在二十日左右就能收到，然后我就可以亲手把它戴在你的手指上了，我可爱的小妻子。

我昨天给特威切尔写了一封短信，对他为促成我们的婚事所做的一切表示感谢。我告诉他，我们想过一种有意义、朴素、真挚、虔诚的生活；我一安顿下来之后，就去联系教堂。出于这些原因，我们俩都喜欢哈特福德这里宁静、安祥的氛围，而不喜欢克利夫兰那种干劲冲天、雄心勃勃的生活方式。我希望他明白，我们需要的是一个家——我们已经受够了生活中的浮华和虚伪，准备走进真实的生活；我们已经厌倦了追逐生活中的幻影和虚无，准备把握它的实质。至少我——"我"的意思就是我们俩，而"我们俩"当然也是指我，因为我们两人不是融为一体了吗？

昨晚我读了很多《圣经》。为什么我们不多读一些《圣经》，而要把一些我们根本不看的书搬进客厅呢？这个问题我已经想了好多次了。

又是乌云密布了，唉，难道不能永远是晴天吗？我又要去睡觉了。带着我给你的充满爱意的吻，你也去睡觉吧，我的偶像。

萨姆

1869年2月15日于俄亥俄州

2

亲爱的：

解除我们的婚约？那我宁愿去死。不，莉维，如果音符能用来记载人们的约定，那么我们的誓言早已成为天堂里永恒的唱片。我们是为彼此而生，即使自然的力量可以与创造它的上帝对抗，也无法使我们分离。我们被无形的锁链紧紧捆绑在一起，这锁链就像连接山脉的花岗岩一样坚不可摧，比嘲弄人类生命短暂的金字塔还要不朽，因为这些锁链本身就是永恒的，永不消逝。

你说我们不会解除婚约，你是对的，否则，从此以后我的生命就将变成空虚、愚蠢的存在；因为我的全部身心都告诉我，我不可能再像爱你那样去爱别的女人。如果没有爱，生活将会变得枯燥乏味、死气沉沉。

说我对埃玛感到难过，这还不确切，因为我勉强能想象得到，如果处于她

的位置，我将会多么痛苦。我能预感到一半这可怕灾难的情景，我不是假装的，它意味着坟墓、疯狂、裹尸布和死亡！总之，一切悲惨的事都会降临在不幸的人身上。一想到这些，我就有想要拥抱你的冲动，想把你紧紧地抱在我的胸前。我知道，并且感觉到，你仍是我亲爱的人，我还没有失去你。



1895年，马克·吐温携妻子儿女进行了为期一年的“赤道环球演说旅行”，图为马克·吐温与妻子在赤道之旅的轮船甲板上。

我对埃玛不仅仅是感到难过——我觉得对她比以往任何时候都友好——我的内疚感一次又一次地告诉我，我一直站在你和她之间，但一直对她关闭着庇护之门。她正在为忧虑的精神寻求安宁，为痛苦的心灵寻找安慰。

真是祸不单行——特威彻尔的一个朋友也正处于不幸之中。他是一位年轻的牧师，我以前曾在特威彻尔的家中与他和他的妻子见过几次。他对妻子像是对偶像那般崇拜和热爱，而现在她却永远地离开了他。两年前，她曾有过一次流产，失去孩子的打击给她带来了身体和精神上的双重痛苦，使她险些丧生；上个星期，她又一次流产了，这次她没能逃脱死神的魔掌，这个年轻的鳏夫几乎绝望到了极点。我们都会面临死亡，我的莉维，但我们的婚约不会破灭。我们的婚姻——正如婚姻所被赋予的意义一样——将属于时间和永恒。

“莉维，莉维，莉维”（我爱这个名字），很抱歉，我们无法送你校样。出版商和电版印刷商针锋相对，因为后者不遵守惯例和合同，不提供两份校样，所以布利斯也没有希望弄到。他会试一下，但很可能遭到拒绝，而且我在页边的空白处写了很多诗，看来我也没有必要去尝试了，尤其像布利斯说的，那是个顽固的、脾气很坏的英国人——但不管怎样，我仍然要去试一试。今天上午我已经看了五十多页校样，这真是一份枯燥乏味、令人恼火、厌烦的苦差。让我难以相信的是，过去与亲爱的人一起看那些类型完全相同的校样时，我竟是那样甘之如饴，并尽可能地拖延时间。可是这次，我只是匆匆忙忙地将它们看了一遍，并在完成任务后，心里感到特别地高兴。这大概花了我两个小时——也许还不到，我甚至还没有动笔给你那可爱动人的来信（今天收到了你7日和8日的来信）写回信，但我现在得停笔了，因为我必须在三点或三点半到胡克夫人家。现在都已经两点多了，我还没刮胡子呢。

我想哈特现在已经走了，我感到非常遗憾，因为如果连她都不算是管理家务的能手，那么我所做的一切判断就都是错的了。对你来说，她是这样一个好伙伴和好帮手，以至于每次想起她，我的心里都有一种感激之情。任何一个对莉维好的人都会得到我的尊敬。我会给身在里斯本的她写信的，我会的。

莉维，亲爱的，你一定要向你的父母转达我的爱（提醒你，不要刻意为我节省，要用庄重有礼、华丽气派的方式），也向你的姐姐苏和西奥多问好。我爱你们全家人。

糟糕，忘了向那只嘲鸟哈蒂问好了。

愿上帝保佑你，亲爱的，上帝的天使守护着你。

萨姆

1869年5月9日于康乃狄格州哈特福特

Mark Twain to His Wife

1

Ohio,15 February 1869.

Livy, darling,

How are you this morning? Forit is morning, I guess, in as much as it is only half past 9, andI have not got up yet. I only awoke a little while ago, and naturally thought of you the first thing. I don't intend to get up till noon.

I wrote to our Mother, — if she will allow me to call her so — and the letter is gone. If I had it back I would write it over again. I see that inletting the letter "write itself" it took entirely too unconventional a form. I forgot, occasionally, the fact that I was really writing to the Public, instead of to her. And so I elaborated what needed no elaboration, and merely touched upon matters which should have been treated more fully. But don't you see? — if I had kept the public in my mind, the sense of being questioned and cross questioned by outsiders, upon matters essentially private and personal, would have been so oppressive that I could not have written at all. It is hard to know that what you are writing (confessing) about your most delicate and private affairs is to be read by strangers and unlovingly criticised and commented on at tea tables and among miscellaneous groups who would often rather say a smart thing than a kind one. So I think that maybe, after all, there may have been a little natural impulse to hold back,

instead of speaking out freely, though I was not really conscious of such an impulse. I do not think I am more sensitive than others woule be under like circumstances.

I told Mrs. Fairbanks to have the ring made, and then express it to me at Elmira so that it would reach there about the 20th. And so you see I can put it on your finger myself, my precious little wife.

I wrote Twichell a short note yesterday to thank him for his kind efforts in forwarding our affairs. I told him we meant to lead a useful, unostentatious and earnest religious life, and that I should unite with the church as soon as I was settled; and that both of us, on these accounts, would prefer the quiet, moral atmosphere of Hartford to the driving, ambitious ways of Cleveland. I wanted him to understand that what we want is a home — we are done with the shows and vanities of life and are ready to enter upon its realities that we are tired of chasing its phantoms and shadows, and are ready to grasp its substance. At least I am — and "I" means both of us, and "both of us" means I of course — for are not we Twain one flesh?

I read a great deal in the Testament last night — why didn't we read the Testament more, instead of carrying loads of books into the drawing room which we never read? I thought of it Several times.

Clouding up again — well, is it never going to clear off? I will go to sleep again. Take this loving kiss and go to bed yourself, my idol.

Sam.

2

Hartford, Conn,9 May 1869.

Break our engagement, darling? I would infinitely rather die. No, Livy, if note is taken of the deeds of men, our troth is writ in the eternal records of Heaven. We were created for each other, and can no more wilfully separate than can the forces of nature defy the God that created them. We are bound to each other by viewless chains that are strong as the granite ribs that link the mountains together, and more enduring than the Pyramids that mock at the perishable vanities of men — for these chains are of eternity itself, andcannot know death.

You are right when you say we shall not break our engagement. My life thenceforward would be only a vain and foolish sort of existence, for I know by every instinct that is in me that I am not capable of loving any other woman as I love you. And life is but a dull, eventless captivity without love.

To say that I am sorry for Emma, but ill expresses it — for I can, after a fashion, divine what my torture would be if I were in her place. That I can divine one-half the magnitude of the terrible calamity, though, I do not pretend. It suggests graves, madness,

winding-sheets and death! — in a word, all horrors that can befall the unfortunate. In presence of the thought, I feel as if I want to put my arms about you and clasp you close to my breast, and know and feel that you are my darling yet, that I have not lost you.

I am more than sorry for Emma — I feel more kindly toward her than I ever did before — and my rebuking conscience iterates and reiterates to me that all the time that I would have stood between you and her and bolted the sheltering doors against her, she was seeking restful words for atroubled spirit and balm for a sore heart.

All the ill news comes at once. A friend of Twichell's is in misfortune — a young minister whom I met, with his wife, at Twichell's house several times heretofore. He loved her to idolatry, and now she is taken from him. She had a miscarriage two years ago, and what with her bodily sufferings and grief for the loss of the child, she came near dying. Last week she had another miscarriage, and did not survive it. The young widower is well nigh beside himself with despair. Death is for us both, my Livy, but not broken engagements. Our marriage — for marriage it is — is for time and eternity.

"Livy, Livy, Livy"(I love the name,)I am so sorry, but we can't have proofs to send you. The publisher and the electrotyper are at daggers'points, and as the latter is not obliged by custom or contract to furnish duplicate proofs, Bliss has little hope of getting them. He will try, but expects a refusal. And I have put so much"poetry In the margin"that it seems hardly worth while for me to make an attempt, especially as Bliss says he is a crusty, ill-natured Englishman — still, I mean to make the attempt anyhow. I have read over fifty pages of proofs this morning — dull, stupid, aggravating, tiresome drudgery it was. It seems incredible to me that these are the very same kind of proofs I used to love to read with my darling and string out as long as possible. But this time I galloped through them and was perfectly delighted when I got through. It took me about two hours — or even less. I haven't even made a start toward answering your dear good letters (7th and 8th received to-day,)and yet I must stop writing now, for at 3 or 3:30 o'clock I must be at Mrs. Hooker's, and it is considerably after 2, now and I am not yet shaved.

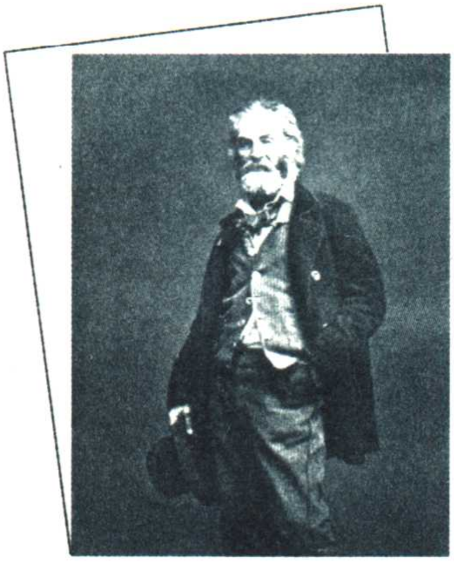
Hat's gone, now, I suppose, and I am most sincerely sorry, for if she isn't a blessing to a household, all my judgments are gone astray. And she was such company and such a help to you, that I feel a grateful glow around about my heart every time I think of her. Anybody that is good to Livy can command my love and respect. I shall write her, to Lisbon, I'll.

Livy dear, you must deliver my love unto your father and mother(andin no stinted measure or in frozen parliamentary pomp and circumstance, I warn you,)and unto your sister Sueand Theodore as well. I love all those parties.

Confound it, I forgot to give Hattie the mocking-bird.

The peace of God be with you, my own darling, and His angels keep you.

Sam.



1803—1882

爱默生 Emerson

十九世纪美国著名的思想家、散文家、演说家、诗人。他崇尚自然、强调个人价值，他的理念对美国人民影响至深。终其一生，爱默生没有致力于任何理论体系的建设，他只注重人的心灵。但他也没有脱离现实，如他自己所说："一个完人是那生活在人群中间而又能极其和蔼可亲地保持寂寞的独立的人。"爱默生的作品主要有《论自然》、《美国学者》等。

惠特曼是美国历史上最伟大的诗人之一。1855年，他自费出版了代表作《草叶集》，其思想自由奔放、鼓舞人心。但在当时遭到了许多非议和恶评，爱默生是第一个公开赞扬《草叶集》的人，在这封信里，他表示了对惠特曼的支持。

爱默生致惠特曼的信

亲爱的先生：

《草叶集》这份珍贵礼物的价值，我怎能视而不见？我认为它是美国有史以来最杰出、最具才智的著作。拜读之际，我喜不自胜，正如所有伟大的作品都能给人带来快乐一样。我们似乎正处于贫瘠而枯竭的状态之中，好像过分的做作和迂腐正使我们西方的才子们变得迟钝而平庸，而《草叶集》正是我们所需要的。我很喜欢您的自由而勇敢的思想，非常喜欢。我感觉许多文字都表现出了它们本身所具有的美妙。您在处理写作手法方面所表现出的大胆，令我感到欣喜，只有具有深刻理解力的人才能拥有这样的灵感。

爱默生写给惠特曼的书信原稿



Concord 21 July
Mass'tts 1855

Dear Sir,

I am not blind to the worth of the wonderful gift of "Leaves of Grass." I find it the most extraordinary piece of wit & wisdom that America has yet contributed. I am very

must have had a long foreground somewhere for such a start. I rubbed my eyes a little to see if this sunbeam were no illusion; but the solid sense of the book is a sober certainty. It has the best merits, namely, of fortifying & encouraging. I did not know until I last night saw

在您的伟大事业伊始之际，我谨向您表示祝贺，如此良好的开端一定会为您的事业带来无限广阔的前景。我以手揉眼，想辨别这道耀眼的光芒究竟是真是幻，但书本在手中的踏实

感又是如此真切。这本书最大的优点就是能够使人拥有并增强勇气。

直到昨天晚上在报纸上见到此书的广告，才确信您用的是真实姓名，可以与您通信。我渴望能与您这样一位良师益友会面，并且很想抛下手中的工作，去纽约拜访您，以表达我的敬意。

爱默生

1855年7月21日于马萨诸塞州康科特市

Emerson to Whitman

Concord, Massachusetts, 21 July, 1855

Dear Sir,

— I am not blind to the worth of the wonderful gift of "**Leaves of Grass**[1]." I find it the most extraordinary piece of **wit**[2] and wisdom that America has yet contributed. I am very happy in reading it, as great power makes us happy. It meets the demand I am always making of what seemed the sterile and **stingy**[3] nature, as if too much **handiwork**[4] or too much **lymph**[5] in the **temperament**[6] were making our western wits fat and mean. I give you joy of your free and brave thought. I have great joy in it. I find incomparable things said incomparably well, as they must be. I find the courage of treatment, which so delights us, and which large perception only can inspire.

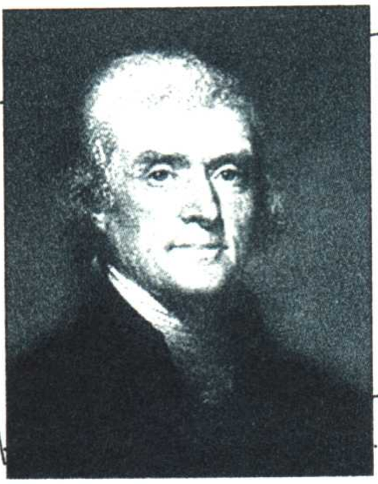
I greet you at the beginning of a great career, which yet must have had a long foreground somewhere, for such a start. I rubbed my eyes a little to see if this **sunbeam**[7] were no illusion; but the solid sense of the book is a sober certainty. It has the best merits, namely, of fortifying and encouraging.

I did not know until I, last night, saw the book advertised in a newspaper, that I could trust the name as real and available for a post-office. I wish to see my benefactor, and have felt much like striking my tasks, and visiting New York to pay you my respects.

Emerson.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. Leaves of Grass《草叶集》
2. wit [wit] *n.* 智力，才智
3. stingy ['stindʒi] *adj.* 小气的，缺乏的
4. handiwork ['hændiwəːk] *n.* 手工，手艺
5. lymph [limf] *n.* 淋巴腺，淋巴
6. temperament ['tempərəmənt] *n.* 气质，性情
7. sunbeam ['sʌnbiːm] *n.* 快乐的人，阳光，光束



杰斐逊致侄子的信

作者简介

1743—1826

托马斯·杰斐逊

Thomas Jefferson

美国第三任总统、律师、音乐家和发明家。他出生在弗吉尼亚州，从小就热爱学习，学识渊博。北美独立战争爆发后，杰斐逊出席了在费城召开的第二届大陆会议，并起草了《独立宣言》。1800年，杰斐逊当选美国第3任总统，并于1805年连任。1809年，杰斐逊在功成名就后退隐家乡，并创建了弗吉尼亚大学。1826年7月4日，杰斐逊逝世，葬于家族的墓地中。他为自己设计的墓碑上刻有以下谦逊的墓志铭："托马斯·杰斐逊，《独立宣言》的起草人，《弗吉尼亚宗教法案》的起草人，弗吉尼亚大学的创建人埋葬于此。"

在信中，杰斐逊给他的侄子作了一下学科指导，列举了几种社会科学的概况和现状，并给出了建议，从中也反映出杰斐逊的知识渊博。

亲爱的彼得：

我已收到你十二月三十日和四月十八日的两封来信。从你和威思先生的来信中，我很高兴地发现，你已经幸运地引起了他的注意，并赢得了他的好感。我相信你会发现这是你一生之中最幸运的事情，正如我的直觉告诉我的，那也是我最幸运的事情。我随信附上一份学科概要，我希望你在威思先生的建议下去申请这些学科。我也提到了这些学科中值得一读的书，当然你还是应该在威思先生的指导下去选择阅读。有些书在你父亲的藏书之中，你应该已经随身带去。由于我记不清哪些书是你父亲的书房中所没有的，你一定要写信告诉我，并把你认为从写信那天起之后的十八个月中你有机会接触到的书列一个清单，并就此请教威思先生。关于这个概要，我还要特别补充几点我的看法：

1.意大利语。我怕学习这种语言会使你把法语和西班牙语与之混淆。由于这几种语言都是由拉丁语退化衍生出来的，所以在会话中很容易混淆。我还从来没有见过一个人能同时说这三种语言而不弄混的。意大利语是一门令人愉快的语言，但近来发生的事倒使西班牙语更

有用处。这个问题先放到一边吧。

2.西班牙语。你要把更多的精力投入到这门学科上来,并尽力去扎实地掌握。我们国家的未来同西班牙及西班牙语美洲国家之间的关系,将使掌握这种语言变得至关重要。美洲历史中关于那片地区的部分也是以西班牙语来记载的。我给你寄去了一本词典。

3.道德哲学。我认为听这门课纯属浪费时间。如果那个要我们去听课的人使我们的道德行为准则变成一门学科,那他一定是个工作拙劣的可怜的家伙。对于懂得这种学问的人来说,会有无数不懂的人,他们应该怎么办呢?人是社会的一分子,因此,他的道德也是以此为目标来形成的。他被赋予仅与此有关的是非感,这种是非感就像听、看、感觉等一样,是人的本能的一部分,它才是道德准则的真正基础,而不是如那些富于幻想的作家所想象的那样是美、真等的基础。是非感或良知,就像腿或手臂一样,是一个人的身体的一部分,它以一种或强或弱的形式被赋予全人类,就像每个人的力量也是有大有小一样。道德可以通过实践得到加强,就像身体的任何一个部分都可以通过锻炼变得强壮一样。在某种程度上,道德确实服从于理智的引导,但服从理智引导的道德只是很小的一部分,甚至比我们所说的常识还要少。如果对一个农民和一个教授陈述一宗道德案件,前者往往会做出很好的判定,而且通常比后者的判定要好得多,因为他没有被人为制定的清规戒律引入歧途。因此,在学这门课的时候,你要多读好书,因为它们不但能给你鼓励,还能引导你的感觉,尤其是斯特恩的书,它们是已有的道德教科书中最好的。除此之外,你还要读我在信里提到的那些书;最重要的,要随时陶冶你的性情,要有感激之心,要慷慨大方,要仁慈,要讲人道,要真诚、公正、坚定、有序、勇敢等等。你要把这其中每一个方面的实践活动都看做是一种可以增强你的道德修养、提高你的自身价值的锻炼。

4.宗教。你的理智现在已经足够成熟,可以研究一下这门学科了。首先,你要摒除一切对新颖独特见解的偏好,要把它们投入到其他学科中去,而不是在宗教上。这一点非常重要,因为在宗教方面,错误的言论也许会造成很严重的后果。另一方面,你要摆脱所有的畏惧和奴性心理,它会使人心理脆弱、行为畏缩;要坚决保持理智,无论遇到任何事、任何意见,都要以理智去面对。你要学会做任何事都要三思而后行,否则,即使真的有上帝存在,也帮不了你,因为上帝也一定会赞同理智的行为,而不是盲目的敬畏。你一定要首先研究自己国家的宗教,那就先看《圣经》吧,然后再看李维和塔西陀的书。看了李维和塔西陀的书之后,你也会像他们一样,开始思考普通自然学科中所包含的真理。从某种程度上说,他们的观点中掺杂了个人的喜好,但是由于他们的喜

好并不违背自然规律，所以也无可厚非。需要注意的是，《圣经》中有一些明显同自然规律相抵触的观点，一定要小心对待，并从多种角度去理解。

5.旅行。旅行能使人变得聪明，但乐趣却不是很多。中年人在旅行时积累知识，并可能会用到这些知识来为他们的国家服务，但在以后的岁月里，他们容易产生伴随着遗憾的回忆；他们的情感因投入到过多的事物上而被减弱；他们养成了新习惯，但回到家后却感觉不适应。年轻人旅行时，更容易遇到这些麻烦，因为他们的见识不够，这种见识需要以往的知识和经历作为基础，而这个基础只有通过日积月累的观察和学习才能建立起来。外面世界的精彩使他们心花怒放、热血沸腾，吸引了他们的全部情感和注意力，使他们难以割舍，此时对他们来说，回家就像被流放或服刑一样；他们的目光永远在回顾已经逝去的事物，这种回忆会毒害他们的余生。这些毫无价值的事情消耗了他们最原始、最美好的感情，他们将这些糟粕带回家中，使自己及身边的人都闷闷不乐。此外，他们还养成了懒散的习惯，丧失了对事业的上进心，这使他们变成了既无助于自己，也无助于国家的废人。这些都是我在观察中所得来的经验，没有什么地方能像自己国家一样，使你在追求知识时免于受到外物的阻碍，也使你心灵的美德不会受到影响。还有，你要有教养、要有学问、要勤奋，这样你就不会借助旅行来使自己热爱祖国、珍视朋友，并善待自己。我再重复我的建议，要多运动，多走路，健康是紧随道德之后人类最重要的需求。亲爱的彼得，要常给我写信，并保证让我对你的成功总是充满兴趣和热情。

你的挚友

1787年8月10日于巴黎

相关链接

新千年，美国权威调查机构首次对200多年来美国历任总统领导素质（政绩、人品）作了一次民意调查，结果显示，托马斯·杰斐逊两项皆名列第一。这再次表明：一个终身为公众的自由、平等与幸福而奋斗的人，不管时间过去多久，都将永远为民众所敬仰。

杰斐逊虽然出生于上层社会家庭，但他毕生的理想与信念却以每个普通的平民为出发点，他的这种高尚的人格和超凡的品德，更是后世为政为官者一面永不褪色的镜子。

Thomas Jefferson to His Nephew

Paris, August 10, 1787.
Dear Peter,

— I have received your two letters of December the 30th and April the 18th, and am very happy to find by them, as well as by letters from Mr. Wythe, that you have been so fortunate as to attract his notice and good will; I am sure you will find this to have been one of the most fortunate events of your life, as I have ever been sensible it was of mine. I **enclose**[1] you a **sketch**[2] of the sciences to which I would wish you to apply, in such order as Mr. Wythe shall advise; I mention, also, the books in them worth your reading, which submit to his correction. Many of these are among your father's books, which you should have brought to you. As I do not recollect those of them not in his library, you must write to me for them, making out a catalogue of such as you think you shall have occasion for, in eighteen months from the date of your letter, and consulting Mr. Wythe on the subject. To this sketch, I will add a few particular observations:

1. Italian. I fear the learning of this language will confound your French and Spanish. Being all of them degenerated dialects of the Latin, they are apt to mix in conversation. I have never seen a person speaking the three languages, who did not mix them. It is a delightful language, but late events having **rendered**[3] the Spanish more useful, lay it aside to **prosecute**[4] that.

2. Spanish. Bestow great attention on this, and endeavor to acquire an accurate knowledge of it. Our future connections with Spain and Spanish America, will render that language a valuable **acquisition**[5]. The ancient history of that part of America, too, is written in that language. I send you a dictionary.

3. Moral Philosophy. I think it lost time to attend lectures on this branch. He who made us would have been a **pitiful**[6] **bungler**[7], if he had made the rules of our moral conduct a matter of science. For one man of science, there are thousands who are not. What would have become of them? Man was destined for society. His **morality**[8], therefore, was to be formed to this object. He was endowed with a sense of right and wrong, merely relative to this. This sense is as much a part of his nature, as the sense of hearing, seeing, feeling; it is the true foundation of morality, and not the "to kalon" (Greek: The beautiful), truth, &c., as fanciful writers have imagined. The moral sense, or conscience, is as much a part of man as his leg or arm. It is given to all human beings in a stronger or weaker degree, as force of members is given them in a greater or less degree. It may be strengthened by exercise, as may any particular limb of the body. This sense is submitted, indeed, in some degree, to the guidance of reason; but

it is a small stock which is required for this: even a less one than what we call common sense. State a moral case to a ploughman and a professor. The former will decide it as well, and often better than the latter, because he has not been led astray by artificial rules. In this branch, therefore, read good books, because they will encourage, as well as direct your feelings. The writings of Sterne, particularly, form the best course of morality that ever was written. Besides these, read the books mentioned in the enclosed paper; and, above all things, lose no occasion of exercising your **dispositions**[9] to be grateful, to be generous, to be **charitable**[10], to be humane, to be true, just, firm, orderly, courageous, &c. Consider every act of this kind, as an exercise which will strengthen your moral faculties and increase your worth.

4. Religion. Your reason is now mature enough to examine this object. In the first place, divest yourself of all bias in favor of novelty and singularity of opinion. Indulge them in any other subject rather than that of religion. It is too important, and the consequences of error may be too serious. On the other hand, shake off all the fears and servile prejudices, under which weak minds are servilely **crouched**[11]. Fix reason firmly in her seat, and call to her tribunal every fact, every opinion. Question with boldness even the existence of a God; because, if there be one, he must more approve of the homage of reason, than that of **blindfolded**[12] fear. You will naturally examine first, the religion of your own country. Read the Bible, then as you would read Livy or Tacitus. The facts which are within the ordinary course of nature, you will believe on the authority of the writer, as you do those of the same kind in Livy and Tacitus. The testimony of the writer weighs in their favor, in one scale, and their not being against the laws of nature, does not weigh against them. But those facts in the Bible which contradict the laws of nature, must be examined with more care, and under a variety of faces.

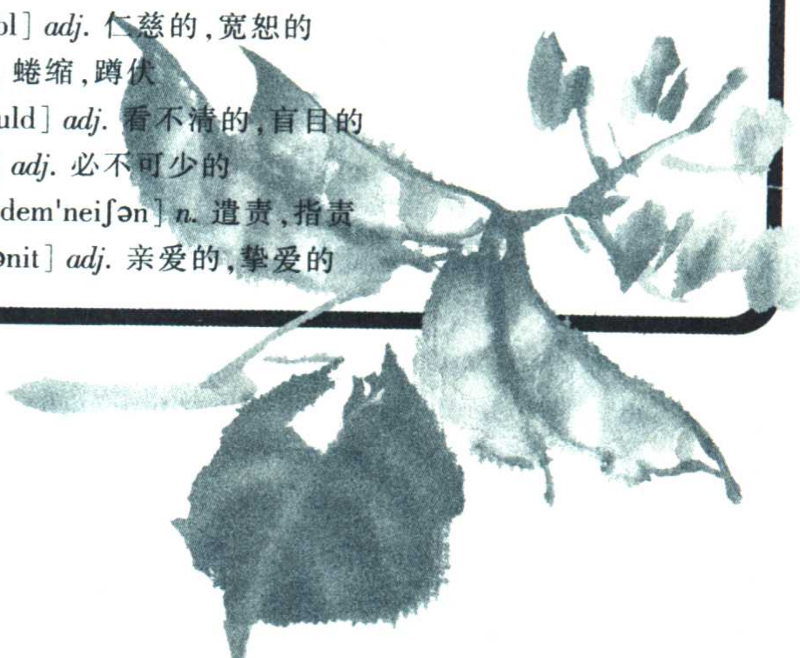
5. Travelling. This makes men wiser, but less happy. When men of sober age travel, they gather knowledge, which they may apply usefully for their country; but they are subject ever after to recollections mixed with regret; their affections are weakened by being extended over more objects; and they learn new habits which cannot be gratified when they return home. Young men, who travel, are exposed to all these inconveniences in a higher degree, to others still more serious, and do not acquire that wisdom for which a previous foundation is **requisite**[13], by repeated and just observations at home. The glare of pomp and pleasure is analogous to the motion of the blood; it absorbs all their affection and attention, they are torn from it as from the only good in this world, and return to their home as to a place of exile and **condemnation**[14]. Their eyes are forever turned back to the object they have lost, and its recollection poisons the residue of their lives. Their first and most delicate passions are hackneyed on unworthy objects here, and they carry home the dregs, insufficient to make themselves or anybody else happy. Add to this, that a habit of idleness, an inability to apply themselves to business is acquired, and renders them useless to themselves and

their country. These observations are founded in experience. There is no place where your pursuit of knowledge will be so little obstructed by foreign objects, as in your own country, nor any, wherein the virtues of the heart will be less exposed to be weakened. Be good, be learned, and be industrious, and you will not want the aid of travelling, to render you precious to your country, dear to your friends, happy within yourself. I repeat my advice, to take a great deal of exercise, and on foot. Health is the first requisite after morality. Write to me often, and be assured of the interest I take in your success, as well as the warmth of those sentiments of attachment with which I am, dear Peter,

your **affectionate**[15] friend.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. enclose [in'kləuz] *vt.* 放入封套，装入
2. sketch [sketʃ] *n.* 素描画
3. render ['rendə] *vt.* 呈递，交纳
4. prosecute ['prɔsikjuːt] *vt.* 实行，从事
5. acquisition [ˌækwi'ziʃən] *n.* 获得，获得物
6. pitiful ['pitiful] *adj.* 另人同情的
7. bungle ['bʌŋgl] *v.* 办糟，文中"bungler"指"笨拙的人"。
8. morality [mɔ'ræliti] *adj.* 道德的 *n.* 道德，文中为名词"道德"。
9. disposition [dispə'ziʃən] *n.* 部署
10. charitable ['tʃæritəbl] *adj.* 仁慈的，宽恕的
11. crouch ['krautʃ] *vi.* 蜷缩，蹲伏
12. blindfold ['blaindfəuld] *adj.* 看不清的，盲目的
13. requisite ['rekwizit] *adj.* 必不可少的
14. condemnation [ˌkɔndem'neiʃən] *n.* 遣责，指责
15. affectionate [ə'fekʃənit] *adj.* 亲爱的，挚爱的





1706—1790

本杰明·富兰克林 Benjamin Franklin

本杰明·富兰克林——十八世纪美国最伟大的科学家，著名的政治家和文学家。他出生于北美洲的波士顿，由于家境贫寒，他很早就辍学当了印刷工人，但他从未放弃过学习，最后自学成才，不到30岁的时候已经成为一个学识渊博的学者和启蒙思想家，在北美声誉日隆。富兰克林在数学、物理、气象、地质、哲学、政治等方面都卓有成就。他曾说过的一句名言"诚实和勤勉，应该成为你永久的伴侣"是他一生的真实写照。在他去世后，他的墓碑上只刻着这几个字："印刷工富兰克林。"

本文是富兰克林写给他姐姐的一封信。

本杰明·富兰克林致姐姐的信

亲爱的姐姐：

我已经收到你6月17日的来信。你说自从我到英格兰之后，你再也没有收到过我的信，这让我惊讶。我至少给你写过两封信，而且在这封信之前还有第三封；在亲自去看望你之后，我又给你寄去了我的照片。六月末我给本尼寄去了一箱书，还给他写了一封信；我希望他全部都能收到，并希望他的工作能有起色。恭喜你们征服了布雷顿岬角，希望正如你们的人民第一次通过祈祷取得这一成就一样，现在你们将祈祷它永远不再被丢弃，然后忘掉这一切。比利很好，现在在乡下。我把他留在了汤布里奇威尔斯，我们在那里住了两个星期，现在他又与人结伴去参观朴次茅斯了。今年夏天，我们一起游览了英格兰的大部分地区和其他一些地方，还参观了我们的父亲出生的小镇，并在那里遇到了一些仍然健在的亲戚。

我们的堂妹简·富兰克林——约翰叔叔的女儿，一年前去世了。我们见到了她的丈夫罗伯特·佩奇，他给了我们一些本杰明叔叔过去写给他妻子的信。其中一封信是1723年7月4日从波士顿寄来的，信中说你们的叔叔约赛亚有一个叫简的女儿，大约十二岁，是个快乐的孩子。因此请你保持这种性格，即使没有收到信，也不要生气。叔叔在送给她的一本名为《独一无二的耶稣》的薄

书里，以她的名义写了一首离合体诗。现在我把它抄录下来，并寄给你，不仅因为你与她同名的缘故，而且因为其中所包含的忠告。

“高高地闪亮着，
在你的领地上明亮地闪耀着
不要昏昏沉沉，要全神贯注，
期待那无尽的欢乐。”
“邪恶逃走了，如同你驱走了恶魔，
把信仰和希望提高到三层楼之上，
让耶稣对你的无尽的爱
从不停止激励你的爱。
去用语言表达善良的心，
让你的柔顺成为一种真诚。
在祈祷中，赞美上帝的话语，
不要停止，直到上帝停止聆听。”

我要真诚地表达我对虔诚的作者的无限尊敬和崇拜，接下来请允许我对这几行诗进行简单的注释和评论。“三层楼之上”的意思似乎有点含混不清，不过，你知道人们一直把信仰、希望和慈善称为雅各天梯的三级台阶，从人间通往天堂；我们的作者把它们称作三层楼，是因为他把宗教比喻为楼房，而信仰、希望和慈善就是基督教圣殿的三层楼。因此宗教的升华就是渐进和顿悟；信仰便是第一层，希望是第二层。我亲爱的詹妮，不要只满足于住在低层的房间里，而要尽可能快地上到顶层，因为事实上，这栋房子里最好的房间是慈善。对我来说，我倒希望房子倒转过来，因为上楼梯太难了（当一个人太胖时），不仅如此，我还认为较之慈善建立在信仰与希望之上，还是信仰与希望建立在慈善之上更稳固一些。无论怎样，我想这样说更妥当一些——

“把信仰与希望提高一层。”

我大胆地对它进行了改正，并且我这样改变是有道理的：因为当你已经上了两层楼的时候，如果你把你的楼房增高三层，总共就造了五层，比应有的多了两层，这样上面的房间就会更多地暴露在风雨之中；此外，恐怕地基也难以承受，除非你确实是用那些极轻的材料，诸如稻草和头发等物去建造，但你知道那样极易失火。另外，作者说：

“去用语言表达善良的心。”

应删去“语言”一词，换上“行为”。这个世界已经充满了恭维，这些恭维在每一块土地上犹如杂草丛生，抑制了“仁慈”和“善行”这样的好植物生长。我并没有自命为第一个把语言和行为比作植物的人，你或许记得一个古代诗人，很久以前在学校的时候，我们都学习并抄录过他的作品。

“一个只说不做的人，

就像是长满杂草的花园。”

令人遗憾的是，一些优秀的作品被某些人所冷落，相反，一些华丽的言辞却受到他们的赞美：我指的是那些表面上虔诚的演讲，而不是仁慈的善行。几乎令人难堪的是，那些人把道德称为腐败的道德，把正直称为褴褛的正直，甚至是污秽的褴褛——如果你提起美德，他们就会皱起鼻子，好像闻到了臭味一样；与此同时，他们急切地发表着貌似虔诚的长篇大论，仿佛那是一种最好的花环。因此，他们把古诗的佳句前后颠倒，改写成：

“一个只做不说的人，

就像是花园里长满了——”

我已忘记了句尾的韵脚，但记得那肯定不是什么好话。我的评述就说这么多。

我妻子会给你看我的信，信里有我们旅行的记述，我希望你能读给道斯妹妹听，并代我向她问好。我想明年回来，那时就可能有幸见到你和你们一家；我将取道波士顿回家。向哥哥和所有孩子问好。亲爱的詹妮，我就此搁笔了，爱你的弟弟。

本·富兰克林

1758年9月16日于伦敦

Benjamin Franklin to His Sister

London, September 16, 1758.

Dear Sister,

I received your favour of June 17. I wonder you have had no letter from me since my being in England. I have written you at least two, and I think a third before this, and what was next to waiting on you in person, sent you my picture. In June last I sent

Benny a trunk of books, and wrote to him; I hope they have come to hand, and that he meets with encouragement in his business. I congratulate you on the conquest of Cape Breton, and hope as your people took it by praying, the first time, you will now pray that it may never be given up again, which you then forgot. Billy is well, but in the country. I left him at Tunbridge Wells, where we spent a fortnight, and he is now gone with some company to see Portsmouth. We have been together over a great part of England this summer and among other places, visited the town our father was born in, and found some relations in that part of the country still living.

Our cousin Jane Franklin, daughter of our uncle John, died about a year ago. We saw her husband, Robert Page, who gave us some old letters to his wife, from Uncle Benjamin. In one of them, dated Boston, July 4, 1723, he writes that your uncle Josiah has a daughter Jane, about twelve years old, a good-humoured child. So keep up to your character, and don't be angry when you have no letters. In a little book he sent her, called "None but Christ," he wrote an acrostic on her name, which for namesake's sake, as well as the good advice it contains, I transcribe and send you.

"Illuminated from on high,
And shining brightly in your sphere.
Ne'er faint, but keep a steady eye,
Expecting endless pleasures there."
"Flee vice as you'd a serpent flee;
Raise faith and hope three stories higher,
And let Christ's endless love to thee
Ne'er cease to make thy love aspire.
Kindness of heart by words express,
Let your obedience be sincere,
In prayer and praise you God address,
Nor cease, till he can cease to hear."

After professing truly that I had a great esteem and veneration for the pious author, permit me a little to play the commentator and critic on these lines. The meaning of three stories higher seems somewhat obscure. You are to understand, then, that faith, hope, and charity have been called the three steps of Jacob's ladder, reaching from earth to heaven; our author calls them stories, likening religion to a building, and these are the three stories of the Christian edifice. Thus improvement in religion is called building up and edification. Faith is then the ground floor, hope is up one pair of stairs. My dear beloved Jenny, don't delight so much to dwell in those lower rooms, but get as fast as you can into the garret, for in truth the best room in the house is charity. For my part, I wish the house was turned upside down; 'tis so difficult (when

one is fat)to go upstairs;and not only so, but I imagine hope and faith may be more firmly built upon charity, than charity upon faith and hope. However that may be, I think it the better reading to say —

"Raise faith and hope one story higher. "

Correct it boldly, and I'll support the alteration; for, when you are up two stories already, if you raise your building three stories higher you will make five in all, which is two more than there should be, you expose your upper rooms more to the winds and storms;and, besides, I am afraid the foundation will hardly bear them, unless indeed you build with such light stuff as straw and stubble, and that, you know, won't stand fire. Again, where the author says,

"Kindness of heart by words express, "

strike out words, and put in deeds. The world is too full of compliments already. They are the rank growth of every soil, and choke the good plants of benevolence, and beneficence;nor do I pretend to be the first in this comparison of words and actionsto plants;you may remember an ancient poet, whose works we have all studied and copied at school long ago.

"A man of words and not of deeds
Is like a garden full of weeds. "

It is a pity that good works, among some sorts of people, are so little valued, and good words admired in their stead: I mean seemingly pious discourses, instead of humane benevolent actions. Those they almost put out of countenance, by calling morality rotten morality, righteousness ragged righteousness, and even filthy rags — and when you mention virtue, pucker up their noses as if they smelt a stink;at the same time that they eagerly snuff up an empty canting harangue, as if it was a pose of the choicest flowers: So they have inverted the good old verse, and say now,

"A man of deeds and not of words
Is like a garden full of — "

I have forgot the rhyme, but remember 'tis something the very reverse of perfume. So much by way of commentary.

My wife will let you see my letter, containing an account of our travels, which I would have you read to sister Dowse, and give my love to her. I have no thoughts of returning till next year, and then may possibly have the pleasure of seeing you and yours;taking Boston in my way home. My love to brother and all your children, concludes at this time from, dear Jenny, your affectionate brother.

B. Franklin.



1880—1968

海伦·凯勒 Hellen Keller

美国著名盲聋女作家、演说家、残障教育家。她在十九个月大时因一次高烧导致失明及失聪，后在她的老师安·沙利文的帮助下学会了识字、说话及与其他人沟通，并顺利从哈佛大学毕业。她一生为残障人士谋求福利，创建了盲哑学校等慈善机构，被美国《时代周刊》评选为二十世纪美国"十大伟人"之一。

爱德华·埃弗雷特·黑尔博士，美国牧师、作家。曾任波士顿南方教堂的教长，退休后被任命为美国参议院的牧师。

海伦·凯勒致爱德华·黑尔博士的信

我和我的老师决定出席将于明天举行的霍维博士百年诞辰纪念会。不过，我不知道明天是否能够有机会与您交谈。我写信给您，只是为了让您知道，在我得知明天您将在纪念会上发言的消息时，内心感到万分欣喜。因为我知道，在霍维博士的帮助下，许多盲人得以重见这个世界，许多失去说话能力的人也学会了唇语的表达方式。我想，只有由您代替他们发言，才可能把那些渴望重新获得受教育的权利、渴望拥有各种机遇和幸福生活的残疾人的心声由衷地表达出来。

如今的我可以坐在这里专心研读，身边有各类书籍相伴，并能和许多伟人与智者结下深厚的友谊，每每想到这一切，我的内心就充满了无限的感激之情。我常想，如果霍维博士没能将上帝的重托予以履行，那么我现在的生活会是怎样呢？如果他没有担负起对劳拉·布里奇曼的教育，并把她从绝望的深渊中解救出来，让她充满对生的希望，我现在还能是一位拉德克利夫学院的二年级学生吗，谁能说得清呢？不过我想，把这些无聊的想法与霍维博士的伟大成就联系在一起毫无意义。

我常常会想到那些死里逃生的人们，当劳拉·布里奇曼被救起的时候，她一定会恍然大悟，一个人的内心如果没有了信仰与希望，就会置身于无尽的

黑暗之中，那将会多么孤单、多么无助、多么迷茫啊！我想，语言根本无法表达身陷绝境的凄凉，也无法表达一个曾被囚禁的灵魂重获自由的喜悦。

在霍维博士开展他的工作之前，盲人同胞们是多么无助啊；而现在，他们已经成为能够独立自主的公民了。意识到这一点，大家才会发现我们的生活发生了怎样天翻地覆的转变。身体上的缺陷曾在我们的生活中筑起了怎样的高墙？我们要对那些帮助我们的朋友和帮助我们的好心人说声谢谢，我们的生活正在向好的方向发展，那美好的生活将会属于我们！

霍维博士的善举必定会赢得人们的喜爱与感激，每当想到这一点，我的内心都会感到十分欣慰。这座城市见证了他为人们所做出的一切，以及他在人类事业上取得的巨大成就。

谨以此信代表我和我的老师向您致以最诚挚的问候。

您最真诚的朋友海伦·凯勒
1901年11月10日于剑桥

相关链接

从海伦童年时起，每一任美国总统都邀请她到白宫做客，还被政府称为“全美三十名为国家做出突出贡献的杰出人士”之一，荣获过美国总统亲自颁发的“自由奖”，并被誉为“美国的高级公民”。1959年，联合国在全球发起以她的名字命名的“海伦·凯勒”运动，以资助世界各地的聋盲儿童。1960年，美国海外盲人基金会在海伦八十岁生日那天，宣布颁发“国际海伦·凯勒奖金”，以奖励那些为盲人公共事业做出杰出贡献的人。

Hellen Keller to Dr. Edward Hale

Cambridge, Nov. 10, 1901.

My teacher and I expect to be present at the meeting tomorrow in commemoration of the one **hundredth**[1] anniversary of Dr. Howe's birth; but I very much doubt if we shall have an opportunity to speak with you; so I am writing now to tell you how delighted I am that you are to speak at the meeting, because I feel that you, better than

any one I know will express the **heartfelt**[2] gratitude of those who owe their education, their opportunities, their happiness to him who opened the eyes of the blind and gave the dumb **lip language**[3].

Sitting here in my study, surrounded by my books, enjoying the sweet and intimate **companionship**[4] of the great and the wise, I am trying to realize what my life might have been, if Dr. Howe had failed in the great task God gave him to perform. If he had not taken upon himself the responsibility of Laura Bridgman's education and led her out of the pit of Acheron back to her human **inheritance**[5], should I be a **sophomore**[6] at Radcliffe College today — who can say? But it is idle to **speculate**[7] about what might have been in connection with Dr. Howe's great achievement.

I think only those who have escaped that death-in-life existence, from which Laura Bridgman was rescued, can realize how isolated, how shrouded in darkness, how cramped by its own impotence is a soul without thought or faith or hope. Words are powerless to describe the desolation of that **prison-house**[8], or the joy of the soul that is delivered out of its captivity. When we compare the needs and helplessness of the blind before Dr. Howe began his work, with their present usefulness and independence, we realize that great things have been done in our midst. What if physical conditions have built up high walls about us? Thanks to our friend and helper, our world lies upward; the length and breadth and sweep of the heavens are ours!

It is pleasant to think that Dr. Hower's **noble**[9] deeds will receive their due **tribute**[10] of affection and gratitude, in the city, which was the scene of his great labors and splendid victories for humanity.

With kind greetings, in which my teacher joins me, I am

Affectionately your friend

Helen Keller.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. hundredth ['hʌndrədθ] *adj.* 第一百的
2. heartfelt ['hɑːtfelt] *adj.* 衷心的，真心真意的
3. lip language 唇语
4. companionship [kəm'pænjənʃip] *n.* 交谊，友谊
5. inheritance [in'heritəns] *n.* 遗产，遗传
6. sophomore ['sɔfəmɔː] *n.* 大学二年级学生
7. speculate ['spekju,leit] *vi.* 推测
8. prison-house 牢房
9. noble ['nəubl] *adj.* 高尚的
10. tribute ['tribjuːt] *n.* 贡品，文中指“回报”。



作者简介

1809—1849

爱伦·坡

Allan Poe

美国作家、文艺评论家。出身演员家庭，提倡"为艺术而艺术"，宣扬唯美主义、神秘主义。受西欧、尤其法国资产阶级文学颓废派影响最大。他于1841年发表的《莫格街谋杀案》被公认为最早的侦探小说，后来他又陆续发表了五部小说，成功地创造了五种推理小说模式，塑造了业余侦探奥古斯特·杜平等一系列深受读者喜爱的艺术典型。爱伦·坡因此被誉为"侦探小说的鼻祖"。其小说风格怪异离奇，充满恐怖气氛。

萨拉·海伦·惠特曼（1803—1878），美国女诗人，她于1828年嫁给律师约翰·惠特曼，1833年丈夫去世后，萨拉搬到普罗维登斯并开始从事写作。1848年，萨拉与爱伦·坡开始交往，两人互相为对方写过几首诗。

爱伦·坡致惠特曼夫人的信

我一次次把你的信紧紧地贴在我的唇上，我最可爱的海伦——让它沐浴在喜悦的泪水之中，或让它沉浸在“无尽的悲伤之中”。可是我——近来还在你面前吹嘘“言语的力量”，但对我而言，仅凭言语的力量又有何用呢？如果能够使我相信祈祷上帝会灵验的话，我情愿虔诚地跪下来祈求上帝，能够在我一生之中最重要的时刻赐予我可使你懂得我真心的言辞。我所有的思想，所有的激情如今似乎已经汇成了一种强烈的渴望——仅仅希望你能够体会我的感受——让你懂得，人类的言语根本无法表达我对你强烈的爱——我对你诗人的气质有着透彻的了解。因此我确信，只要你能够用你那双纯洁而神圣的眼睛看看我的内心深处，你定会接受我对你说的那句话。唉！你仍毅然决然地不肯开口说出那句话——只要你知道我对你的爱有多么浓，你一定会爱我。在这冷酷、阴郁的人世，被人爱是否真的很重要？我多么希望自己能够把我加了四个重点符号的字所含的意义深深地印在你的心灵！可是，唉！一切努力都是徒劳的！“无论人间天堂，都没有人懂得我的心”。

当我向你倾诉我内心的感受，告诉你这是

我第一次如此爱慕一个人的时候，我并没有指望你能够相信我，更不曾奢求你能理解我。既然这样，此时的我又怎能说服你呢——可是，在那些漫长而昏暗的夏夜，我把你深深地埋藏在心里，并向你诉说着充满激情的岁月和不为人知的秘密，你一定能够感受得到我的真情，对于你，我绝不会有任何欺骗。你一定能够感受得到，除了你，没有任何力量能够使我心动——让我沉浸在这种无法用言语表达的情感之中，在炫目的光芒环绕中，我的激情已被照亮，而且正在燃烧——我的灵魂充斥着光芒、疑惑和敬畏之情。当我们走过那片公墓时，我曾流着泪对你说："海伦，我爱你，这是我第一次投入这样的真情。"如今，我再次重复了这句话，我并不指望你能相信我，只是我忍不住要想，为何我们不能将彼此的心填满——我，第一次将自己的一切付出，而且，我能够感受得到，你的诗句依然萦绕在我耳际——

哦，我心爱的人啊，我思念着你，
虽然那记忆中的阴云，
聚积在金色的天空之中，
但生活，却如此美丽。
我思念着你和你那孤独的墓穴，
在绿色山丘的一侧，远远地——
我看到朵朵野花
围绕着你，就像远处吹来的晚风；
虽然，那阴冷的云
是生活中的唯一
年少时的梦却再次重现，
伴着那甜蜜的誓言。

啊，海伦！你的诗句如此美丽，美丽得——让我觉得有些残忍。为什么——为什么你要让我看见这首诗？我知道你有特殊的意图。

现在，我要用自己所掌握的最简洁的言语来描述你留在我脑海中的印象——当你走进屋时，脸色苍白，有些怯懦，也有些迟疑，一副心事重重的样子；当你我的目光相遇时，我有生以来第一次激动地感受到，这世上的确存在一种不可思议的心灵感应。我知道你就是海伦——我的海伦——我千万次梦到过的海伦——她的唇曾如此真切地吻过我——是上帝的旨意，让她来到我

身边。如果她此刻无法成为我的唯一，那么在今后，在天国里，她将永远属于我。你支支吾吾地说着什么，也许你根本不知道自己在说什么；而我，虽没听到你的言语，但却听到了你温柔的声音，那声音如此熟悉，甚至比自己的声音还要熟悉、比天使的声音更动听……

让我从你的信中引用一段话吧："也许，你试图使我确信，我是你最合适的人选——我的面容使你着迷——可是，在这一方面我是善变的，也许今日令你一见倾心的容颜，明日便会令你失望不已。虽然我十分欣赏你的才智，钦佩你的天赋。可是，我觉得你在我面前依然是个孩子。也许你还不知道，我的年龄比你大几岁。我担心你并不知道这一点，如果你知道了，一定不会如此痴心。"——看到你写下的如此坦诚的言语，我的心上多了一份幸福的负担，眼中那甜蜜的泪水也忍不住流了下来。海伦，你在年龄上所顾忌的一切完全是错误的……难道在你的内心深处从未感受到世人所说的"心灵恋爱"吗？难道这世上根本不存在这样的恋情吗？我要求——要求听你发自肺腑的真言——难道你不认为我的本性——我的灵性，正以炽热的激情渴望着与你结合在一起吗？人类的灵魂有年龄的界线吗？永恒能够计算时间吗？那只要开始，便绝不会停止的情感会在乎这只能存在数年的身体吗？啊，你怎能凭白无故地屈枉我郑重而真挚的情感？你简直要令我哭泣、让我发火了。对于你容貌的问题，我该怎样回答呢？难道我不曾见过你的容颜？难道我不曾听过你动听的声音？难道我不曾为你迷人的微笑而屏息凝气吗？难道我不曾紧握你的手，透过你那水晶般的天国之眼，注视着你的心灵吗？难道这一切我们不曾经历过吗？——倘若不是这样，难道是在梦中？或是我已疯癫？

即便你对自己的评述完全是事实：由于病魔缠身而弱不禁风，即便如此，你仍如我的生命一样宝贵！我仍会一如既往地爱着你——更加崇拜你——这种幸福感足以证明我对你的情感！可是，我又该说些什么呢？只要说起你，怎会有人不怀着赞美之情？有谁见到你之后不对你心生爱意呢？

可是，我感到此刻有一种恐惧感压迫着我，我已经能够清楚地感觉到这种思绪了——毫无根据，又无计可施……

尽快给我来信吧——尽快——快些吧！不必写得太多。

爱伦·坡

Allan Poe to Mrs. Whitman

I have pressed your letter again and again to my lips, sweetest Helen — **bathing it in tears of joy**[1], or of a "**divine**[2] despair". But I — who so lately, in your presence, vaunted the "power of words" — of what **avail**[3] are mere words to me now? Could I believe in the efficiency of prayers to the God of Heaven, I would indeed kneel — humbly kneel — at this the most earnest epoch of my life — kneel in entreaty for words — but for words that should disclose to you — that might enable me to lay bare to you my whole heart. All thoughts — all passions seem now **merged**[4] in that one consuming desire — the mere wish to make you comprehend — to make you see that for which there is no human voice — the unutterable fervor of my love for you: — for so well do I know your poet-nature, oh Helen, Helen! that I feel sure if you could but look down now into the depths of my soul with your pure spiritual eyes you could not refuse to speak to me what, alas! you still **resolutely**[5] have unspoken — you would love me if only for the greatness of my love. Is it not something in this cold, dreary world, to be loved? — Oh, if I could but burn into your spirit the deep — the true meaning which I attach to those three syllables underlined! — but, alas: the effort is all in vain and "I live and die unheard".

When I spoke to you of what I felt, saying that I loved now for the first time, I did not hope you would believe or even understand me; nor can I hope to **convince**[6] you now — but if, throughout some long, dark summer night, I could but have held you close, close to my heart and whispered to you the strange secrets of its **passionate**[7] history, then indeed you would have seen that I have been far from attempting to deceive you in this respect. I could have shown you that it was not and could never have been in the power of any other than yourself to move me as I am now moved — to oppress me with this **ineffable**[8] emotion — to surround and bathe me in this electric light, illumining and enkindling my whole nature — **filling** my soul with glory, **with**[9] wonder, and with awe. During our walk in the cemetery I said to you, while the bitter, bitter tears sprang into my eyes — "Helen, I love now — now — for the first and only time." I said this, I repeat, in no hope that you could believe me, but because I could not help feeling how unequal were the heart-riches we might offer each to each: — I, for the first time, giving my all at once, and forever, even while the words of your poem were yet ringing in my ears: —

Oh then, beloved, I think on thee
And on that life so strangely fair
Ere yet one cloud of Memory

Had gathered in Hope's golden air.
I think on thee and thy lone grave
On the green hill-side far away —
I see the wilding flowers that wave
Around thee as the night-winds sway;
And still, though only clouds remain
On Life's **horizon**[10]*, cold and drear,*
The dream of Youth returns again
With the sweet promise of the year.

Ah Helen, these lines are indeed beautiful, beautiful — but their very beauty was cruelty to me. Why — why did you show them to me? There seemed, too, so very especial a purpose in what you did.

And now, in the most simple words at my command, let me paint to you the impression made upon me by your personal presence. — As you entered the room, pale, timid, hesitating, and evidently oppressed at heart; as your eyes rested appealingly, for one brief moment, upon mine, I felt, for the first time in my life, and tremblingly acknowledged, the existence of spiritual influences altogether out of the reach of the reason. I saw that you were Helen — my Helen — the Helen of a thousand dreams — she whose **visionary**[11] lips had so often lingered upon my own in the divine trance of passion — she whom the great Giver of all Good had preordained to be mine — mine only — if not now, alas! then at least hereafter and forever, in the Heavens. — You spoke **falteringly**[12] and seemed scarcely conscious of what you said. I heard no words — only the soft voice, more familiar to me than my own, and more **melodious**[13] than the songs of the angels ···

Let me quote to you a passage from your letter: — "You will, perhaps, attempt to convince me that my person is agreeable to you — that my countenance interests you: — but in this respect I am so variable that I should inevitably disappoint you if you hoped to find in me to-morrow the same aspect which won you today. And, again, although my reverence for your intellect and my admiration of your genius make me feel like a child in your presence, you are not, perhaps, aware that I am many years older than yourself. I fear you do not know it, and that if you had known it you would not have felt for me as you do." — To all this what shall I — what can I say — except that the heavenly candor with which you speak oppresses my heart with so rich a burden of love that my eyes overflow with sweet tears. You are mistaken, Helen, very far mistaken about this matter of age. I am older than you; and if illness Do you not feel in your inmost heart of hearts that the "soul-love" of which the world speaks so often and so idly is, in this instance at least, but the veriest, the most absolute of realities? Do you not — I ask it of your reason, darling, not less than of your heart — do you not per-

ceive that it is my diviner nature — my spiritual being — which burns and pants to commingle with your own? Has the soul age, Helen? Can Immortality regard Time? Can that which began never and shall never end, consider a few wretched years of its **incarnate**[14] life? Ah, I could weep — I could almost be angry with you for the unwarranted wrong you offer to the purity — to the sacred reality of my affection. — And how am I to answer what you say of your personal appearance? Have I not seen you, Helen, have I not heard the more than melody of your voice? Has not my heart ceased to throb beneath the magic of your smile? Have I not held your hand in mine and looked steadily into your soul through the crystal Heaven of your eyes? Have I not done all these things? — or do I dream? — or am I mad?

Were you indeed all that your fancy, enfeebled and perverted by illness, tempts you to suppose that you are, still, life of my life! I would but love you — but worship you the *more: — it would be so glorious a happiness to be able to prove to you what I* feel! But as it is, what can I — what am I to say? Who ever spoke of you without emotion — without praise? Who ever saw you and did not love?

But now a deadly terror oppresses me; for I too clearly see that these objections — so groundless — so futile …

Write soon — soon — oh, soon! — but not much.

Allan Poe.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. bathing it in tears of joy "沐浴在喜悦的泪水中",bath 原为沐浴,洗澡之意。
2. divine [di'vain] *adj.* 神圣的,超凡的,文中"divine despair"意为"无尽的悲伤"。
3. avail [ə'veil] *vi.* 有益于,有帮助
4. merge [məːdʒ] *v.* 合并,并入
5. resolute ['rezəljuːt] *adj.* 坚决的
6. convince [kən'vins] *vt.* 使确信,使信服
7. passionate ['pæʃənit] *adj.* 充满热情的
8. ineffable [in'efəbl] *adj.* 不能说的,言语无法表达的
9. fill … with 使充满
10. horizon [hə'raizn] *n.* 地平线
11. visionary ['viʒənəri] *adj.* 幻影的,幻想的
12. faltering ['fɔːltəriŋ] *adj.* 犹豫的,支吾的,文中 faltheringly *adv.* 意为支吾地。
13. melodious [mi'ləudjəs] *adj.* 音调优美的
14. incarnate ['inkɑːneit] *vt.* 体现,使具体化



尤金·奥尼尔致卡洛塔·奥尼尔的信

作者简介 1888—1953

尤金·奥尼尔

Eugene O' Neil

美国现代戏剧之父，被誉为“二十世纪美国戏剧传统的开拓者”。他的剧本一向善于分析世事的无情、人类的唯物至上，以及发现自己真正身分的种种社会问题。奥尼尔一生共创作独幕剧二十一部，多幕剧二十八部，代表作有《东航卡迪夫》、《加勒比斯之月》、《安娜·克里斯蒂》等。奥尼尔曾四次荣获普利策奖，并于1936年获诺贝尔文学奖。

奥尼尔一生结过三次婚。1909年与凯瑟琳·詹金斯结婚，生子小尤金；1918年与小说家艾格妮丝·博尔顿结合，生子沙恩和女儿乌娜。1926年，奥尼尔结识女演员卡洛塔·蒙特雷，1928年两人同赴法国，又到新加坡、西贡和上海旅游，次年，艾格妮丝同意离婚，奥尼尔便与卡洛塔正式结为夫妇。

我亲爱的妻子：

我一回到酒店就开始给你写信，明天我就会将它连同一束鲜花寄到你那里。

独自一人置身在这间公寓里，我感到如此孤单！不过，你可以想像——我绝不会用那些烘托我孤独感的词语来增添你的负担，使你为我感到伤心。我那种顾影自怜的情绪对你没有任何好处。所以，暂且把自己想像成一副泰然的模样吧！你不在我身边，这对你来说终究是件好事，你的体质会有所增强，并很快恢复健康——那也便意味着我们的幸福就要来临了。近来，看到你疲惫不堪、闷闷不乐的模样，我感到十分难过——总觉得这都是我的错，在某些方面上，是我对不起你。如果你出院时能够像往常那样健康，一定会使我重新打起精神来。所以，请你打起精神，继续坚持下去吧！虽然只有三个星期，在我看却似遥遥无期。不过，不管怎样，我们总能熬过去的！集中精力，好好养病，不要为我担心！即便你不在身边，我也会调整好自己的心态——虽然做起来有些困难！——我只能盼望着，你会一天天好起来，恢复健康的！——我希望可以通过这种方式帮助你，这样的话，我也会

精神振奋。所以，你一定要听我的话！好好养病！我很愿意为你的康复做些什么，这是我的福气！若不这样想，我就会失魂落魄！

我能够想象得到今晚和那个作曲家先生在一起将会多么无聊！

愿主保佑你！吻你——爱你！

你的吉恩

1931年1月22日 星期日晚

相关链接

许多批评家抱怨在奥尼尔的世界里只剩下了绝望，还有更多的人认为他写的本子冗长，人物对话啰嗦，戏剧变成了小说。萧伯纳曾说："奥尼尔身上除去革新再也没有新的东西了。"其实，这是他没有充分理解奥尼尔。奥尼尔一直抱着对人生诚实的态度和尤利西斯般的勇气深入人类的内心，这使得他身上的许多缺点都变得无足轻重。如果说阴郁也算文学特征的话，奥尼尔应该属于阴郁大师之列。

Eugene O'Neil to Carlotta O'Neil

Sunday night, January 22th, 1931.
Dearest Own Wife,


图为尤金·奥尼尔与妻子卡洛塔·奥尼尔在一起。卡洛塔是尤金的第三任妻子，也是他的最爱。

I am writing this soon after my return to the hotel and will send it out with the flowers tomorrow.

It seems so lonely in our apartment now! But you can imagine — and I am not going to burden you with any depressing news about how desolate I feel. Bad for you! So picture me as being as **philosophical**[1] about it as can be and telling myself your absence will

turn out to be a wonderful thing for you, will make you fat and well again — and therefore means our happiness! I have felt so and lately seeing you look so worn out and unhappy-felt it was my fault, that I had failed you somehow. It will certainly buck me up **tremendously**[2] when you come out of the hospital your old self again. So keep the old pecker up and carry on! Time does pass, you know and even these three weeks. Which seems like a million years to me now, will get itself past! Keep your mind on your job! Worry not about me! I'm as comfortable here as I could be any place without you — which isn't saying much, of course! — and I'll keep my spirit cheery by the **constant**[3] thought that you are getting well and that's my way to help you! So you get well. Hear me! I'm very glad I have this work to do. It's luck really. Otherwise I would be lost!

I **anticipate**[4] a dull evening with the composer gent!

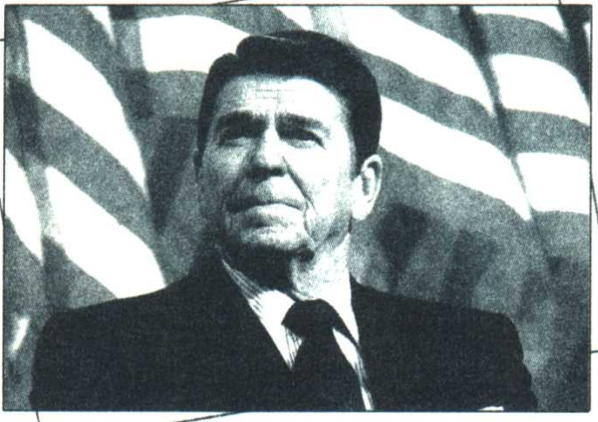
God bless you! Kisses—and all my love!

Yours Gene.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. philosophical [ˌfiləˈsɔfikəl] *adj.* 哲学的
2. tremendous [triˈmendəs] *adj.* 极大的，巨大的，后面加"ly"后意为十分地，非常地。
3. constant [ˈkɔnstənt] *adj.* 持续的
4. anticipate [ænˈtisipeit] *vt.* 期望，预期





罗纳德·里根致夫人的信

作者简介 1911—2004

罗纳德·里根

Ronald Reagan

美国第40任总统。早年曾当过演员，从政后曾任加利福尼亚州州长，并于1981年和1985年两度入主白宫，是年龄最大的美国总统，也是迄今为止寿命最长的美国总统。里根被称为“伟大的沟通者”，他在连任期间积极推行美国经济复兴计划，并且削减政府开支，进行税收改革，重振了美国经济。

南希·戴维斯·里根曾是好莱坞米高梅影片公司的演员。1949年，她与当时身为电影协会主席的罗纳德·里根结识并相恋，1952年，两人结为夫妇。1966年里根当选加利福尼亚州州长后，南希开始参加社会活动；1981年随里根入主白宫成为第一夫人后，南希主要从事儿童教育工作。里根夫妇感情极好，他们半个世纪的恩爱婚姻是美国人民心中一道美丽的风景。

这封信是里根在结婚三十一周年时写给妻子的，从字里行间可以看出，虽然已经结婚三十多年，但夫妇之间的那份爱依然没有褪色。

亲爱的夫人：

按照惯例，你应在早餐盘上看到纪念卡，不过今年我却打乱了这个习惯——我已于几周前寄出了一份礼物。

像我这样能够有幸度过三十一年幸福生活的男人恐怕不多。我曾经对你说过，这种感觉就如同年少时憧憬着举行婚礼的日子一般，至今仍未改变。

你知道我非常喜欢我们的牧场，可直到最近我才发现，只有当你在那里的时候，我才那样喜欢它——当你陪伴在我身边时，无论何时何地都会令我感到特别充实；当你离我远去，我就会迷失在时空之中。

我对你的感情已不仅仅是一个“爱”字就能够表达得了的，没有你，我的人生就不再完整。对我而言，你就是我的生活。你离开我的时候，我只能苦苦企盼你归来，让我重新焕发出生命的光彩。

结婚周年快乐，谢谢你伴我走过三十一个春秋。

我爱你。

感激不尽的丈夫

1983年3月4日

相关链接

里根晚年患老年痴呆症之后，说话已经十分吃力，但他还能时常出去走走。有一次，里根在保镖的陪同下散步回来，他在一个院门紧锁的宅子前停了下来，试图推开那扇紧锁的门，保镖以为他认错了家门，就轻轻拉着他的手说："总统先生，这不是我们的家。"里根的回答让他很吃惊，也让南希流出了幸福的泪水，他十分费力地说："我知道……我只想给我的爱人摘朵玫瑰。"

Ronald Reagan to His Wife

March 4 1983.

Dear First Lady,

I know tradition has it that on this morning I place cards Happy Anniversary cards on your breakfast tray. But things are somewhat mixed up. I substituted a gift and delivered it a few weeks ago.

Still this is the day, the day that marks 31 years of such happiness as comes to few men. I told you once that it was like an adolescent's dream of what marriage should be like. That hasn't changed.

You know I love the ranch but these last two days made it plain I only love it when you are there. Come to think of it that's true of every place and every time. When you aren't there I'm no place, just lost in time and space.

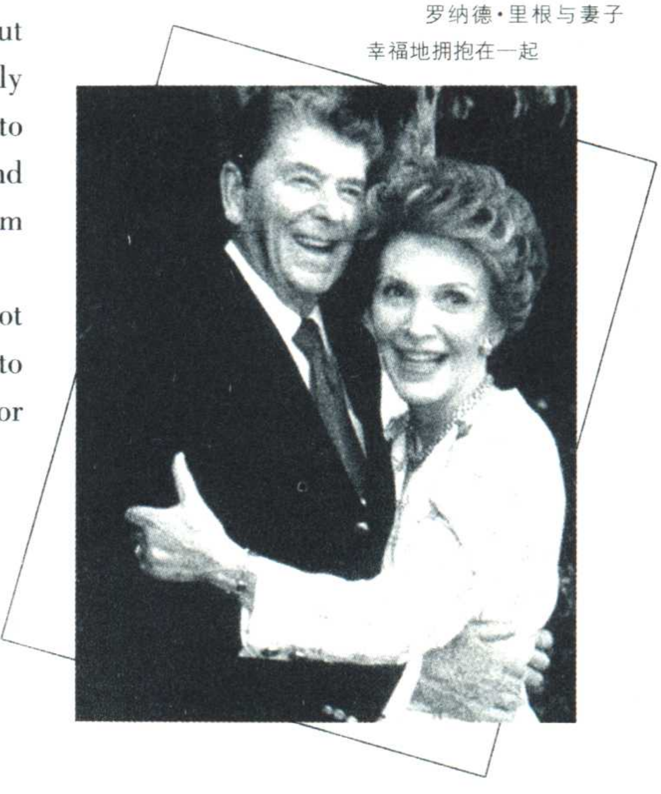
I more than love you, I'm not whole without you. You are life itself to me. When you are gone I'm waiting for you to return so I can start living again.

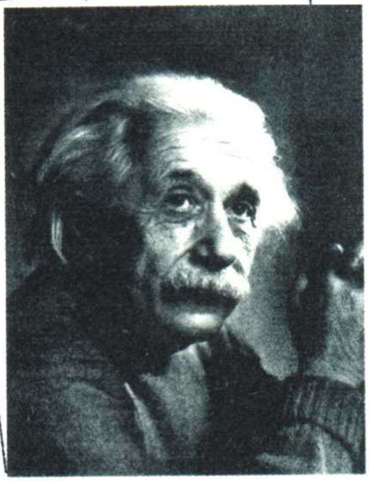
Happy Anniversary and thank you for 31 wonderful years.

I love you.

Your Grateful Husband

罗纳德·里根与妻子幸福地拥抱在一起





1879—1955

阿尔伯特·爱因斯坦 Albert Einstein

德裔美国物理学家，相对论的创立者，于1921年获得诺贝尔物理学奖。爱因斯坦热爱科学，也热爱人类，他并没有因为埋头于科学研究而把自己置身于社会之外，而是一直关心着人类的文明和进步，并为之顽强、勇敢地进行着战斗。

二战开始后，爱因斯坦出于对希特勒下令研制原子弹的忧虑，应几位科学家的请求，就此事先后于1939年8月2日和1940年3月7日给美国总统罗斯福写了两封信，希望促使美国先于纳粹德国制造出原子弹。罗斯福总统经过全盘考虑，以4亿美元的预算启动了“曼哈顿工程”，使美国在二战结束前研制出了原子弹。

爱因斯坦致罗斯福的信

1

先生：

E·费尔米和L·斯兹拉德已通过书面形式就近期的工作情况与我进行了一番交流，我们认为铀这种元素很有可能在不久的将来成为一种极其重要的能量资源。不过，某些方面要求我们必须提高警觉性。必要的话，最好让相关部门即刻采取行动。我认为向您提供下面一些事实和建议是我义不容辞的责任：

近四个月来，约里奥在法国的工作与费尔米和斯兹拉德在美国的工作进展得都很不错——建立铀的核链式反应的时机已成熟，巨大的能量源和数目庞大的镭将被生成。现在，我们已能够确定，这一目标很快就可以实现。

这种新生成的能量很有可能被当作制造炸弹的原料——这完全在我们的预料之中——虽然我们还不能十分肯定这种新型的高强度炸弹是否会问世。到时，如果用船只运输这样一枚新型炸弹，倘若不幸在某个港口爆炸的话，恐怕不止这一个港口会受到污染，附近水域都将难逃此劫。可是，这种新型炸弹的重量又是飞机无法承受的，因此也无法空运。

在美国，只拥有质地中等的铀矿石，而加拿大、捷克斯洛伐克却拥有高质量的铀矿石。而最重要的铀资源产地则在比利时和刚果。

基于这一形势，您或许应该考虑一下让美国政府与研究链式反应的物理学家之间建立起长久的联系。您可以将这一任务托付给一位值得您信赖的人，而且效力于非官方部门。他需执行的任务包括：

一、与政府部门保持联系，提交近期动态，以及一些与政府行动相关的建议，并提醒政府部门一定要保证美国铀矿石的供应。

二、加强实验工作。如今，只有大学实验室所需资金被纳入国家预算之中。而我们的实验如果需要资金的话，完全可以让他与愿为这项事业投资的人士接洽，而且，他还可以通过和工业实验室的合作来获取必要的实验仪器……

您真诚的阿尔伯特·爱因斯坦

1939年8月2日于帕科尼克 长岛

2

去年十月，政府代表曾与从事实验工作的科学家们共同召开了一次会议。希望此次会议后各方面工作的进展情况能够引起您的注意……

自战争爆发以来，德国对铀资源的兴趣越来越高。我听说威廉皇家学会已增设了物理学研究学会，并秘密开展一系列研究活动，且物理研究学会已被政府接管，一批物理学家也受C·F·冯·魏茨泽克——现正与化学研究所共同合作对铀进行研究——直接领导，先前的主管在战时已被勒令休假了。

您觉得这一消息是否应该通知总统呢——您可以自行决定。您是否已就此采取行动了呢？

斯兹拉德博士已将发表在《物理评论报》上的一篇文章的手稿交给了我，他将铀的连锁反应原理进行了详细的描述。如果没有任何阻碍的话，这一手稿恐怕将被印刷出来，现在的问题是，是否应采取措施禁止其出版。

我已经与普林斯顿大学的魏格纳教授对手稿中颇有价值的信息进行了探讨。斯兹拉德博士将去年十月至今的各方面进展情况以备忘录的形式交给您。您可依据备忘录上所记录的情况为当前局势采取一系列举措。您会发现，斯兹拉德博士的备忘录与M·约里奥在法国记录的相关内容——您将在相关报道中看到详细内容有所不同，可以说前者要比后者更具参考价值。

1940年3月7日

Einstein to Roosevelt

1

Peconic, Long Island. August 2nd 1939.

Sir,

Some recent work by E.Fermi and L. Szilard, which has been communicated to me in manuscript, leads me to expect that the element uranium may be turned into a new and important source of energy in the immediate future. Certain aspects of the situation which has arisen seem to call for watchfulness and, if necessary, quick action on the part of the Administration. I believe therefore that it is my duty to bring to your attention the following facts and recommendations:

In the course of the last four months it has been made probable-through the work of Joliot in France as well as Fermi and Szilard in America — that it may become possible to set up a nuclear chain reaction in a large mass of uranium,by which vast amounts of power and large quantities of new radium-like elements would be generated. Now it appears almost certain that this could be achieved in the immediate future.

This new phenomenon would also lead to the construction of bombs, and it is conceivable-though much less certain — that extremely powerful bombs of a new type may thus be constructed. A single bomb of this type, carried by boat and exploded in a port, might very well destroy the whole port together with some of the surrounding territory. However, such bombs might very well prove to be too heavy for transportation by air.

The United States has only very poor ores of uranium in moderate quantities. There is some good ore in Canada and the former Czechoslovakia. while the most important source of uranium is Belgian Congo.

In view of the situation you may think it desirable to have more permanent contact maintained between the Administration and the group of physicists working on chain reactions in America. One possible way of achieving this might be for you to entrust with this task a person who has your confidence and who could perhaps serve in an inofficial capacity. His task might comprise the following:

a) to approach Government Departments, keep them informed of the further development, and put forward recommendations for Government action, giving particular attention to the problem of securing a supply of uranium ore for the United States;

b) to speed up the experimental work,which is at present being carried on within

the limits of the budgets of University laboratories, by providing funds, if such funds be required, through his contacts with private persons who are willing to make contributions for this cause, and perhaps also by obtaining the cooperation of industrial laboratories which have the necessary equipment

Yours very truly
Albert Einstein.

2

March 7, 1940.

I wish to draw your attention to the development which has taken place since the conference that was arranged through your good offices in October last year between scientists engaged in this work and governmental representatives···

Since the outbreak of the war, interest in uranium has intensified in Germany. I have now learned that research there is carried out in great secrecy and that it has been extended to another of the Kaiser Wilhelm Institutes, the Institute of Physics. The latter has been taken over by the government and a group of physicists, under the leadership of C. F. von Weizs cker, who is now working there on uranium in collaboration with the Institute of Chemistry. The former director was sent away on leave of absence, apparently for the duration of the war.

Should you think it advisable to relay this information to the President, please consider yourself free to do so. Will you be kind enough to let me know if you are taking action in this direction?

Dr. Szilard has shown me the manuscript which he is sending to the Physics Review in which he describes in detail a method of setting up a chain reaction in uranium. The papers will appear in print unless they are held up, and the question arises whether something ought to be done to withhold publication.

I have discussed with professor Wigner of Princeton University the situation in the light of the information available. Dr. Szilard will let you have a memorandum informing you of the progress made since October last year so that you will be able to take such action as you think in the circumstances advisable. You will see that the line he has pursued is different and apparently more promising than the line pursued by M. Joliot in France, about whose work you may have seen reports in the papers.



罗伯特·骚塞
致夏洛蒂·勃朗特的信

作者简介

1774—1843

罗伯特·骚塞

Robert Southey

英国散文家，“湖畔派”诗人之一，浪漫主义诗歌的代表，他与另一“湖畔派”诗人柯勒律治是连襟。1813年他被封为“桂冠诗人”，在当时享有盛名，他的诗作也因此备受推崇。但如今他的诗少人问津；相反，他的散文作品却因为文笔清新而大受欢迎，其中一些名篇被读者广为传诵，如《纳尔逊传》、《英国来信》等。

本文是骚塞在收到勃朗特(《简·爱》的作者)的信后，写给她的回信。

小姐：

也许你在见到此信之前已对我回复你2月29日的来信不抱任何希望了。当你执笔写信时，我正在康沃尔的边境上；两周后，我在汉普郡收到了你的信。随后，我前往世界各地参加活动，又在伦敦忙碌了整整三个星期，因而耽误了给你回信的时间。现在，我终于回到家中，当务之急就是要把外出这段时间所耽搁的事务处理完。因此，我只好把大量未回复的文件处理完之后才来提笔回复你的信件。这并不是我对你信中所谈的内容不屑一顾，事实上，我认为回复那封信并非是一件轻而易举的事；而且，要给一个满怀憧憬、雄心壮志的年轻人泼一盆凉水也绝不是件令人愉快的事情。

尽管你那封信的署名很可能是个假名，但我却从你的来信之中看到了你的真诚。不管怎样，这几首诗和这封信完全是出自同一个人的手笔，而我也完全能够理解这些诗所表达的意境。也许，你已在手头的诸多出版物中看到了我的作品，对我也有了一些了解。可是，倘若你真正了解我，或仅仅与我相识，那么，仅凭这一点点的了解就会大大削弱你的热情。只要你看一

看诗人的晚年生活，你的热情就会有所减退。然而，我并不是一个消极的人，也不是一个不懂得满足的人；而且，你永远不会听到我会以“万物皆空虚”之类的言辞慷慨激昂地大肆说教一番。

你真正想从我这里得到的，并非是我对你今后的发展之路所提出的某些忠告，而是想让我就你的才能谈谈自己的看法。也许你会对我的意见不屑一顾，但是，这些忠告却是极其有益的。毋庸置疑，你在很大程度上已经具备了华兹华斯所说的“诗才”；可是，如今这样的“诗才”已经屡见不鲜——我这样说并不是在贬低诗才。现在，每年都会有多本诗集出版，但却无法引起大众的关注。不过，要是这些诗集能够在半个世纪以前出版，这些诗作的作者都会名声远扬。基于这样的现实，所有急于成名的人恐怕都应该首先做好失望的准备了。

但是，如果你能够为自己的幸福着想，就不要为了功名才去磨炼自己的诗才。我已经把文学创作当作自己的职业，并将终生致力于文学事业，而且，我从未对自己所做的慎重选择感到后悔。可是，我依然认为劝诫每一位想要选择这条道路的青年人放弃这个念头是我们义不容辞的职责。也许你会说，对于一个女人而言这种忠告根本没有必要，因为这条路并不会带给她任何危险。从某种意义上而言，这句话一点不假；但是，有一种危险我必须提醒你，你日日沉迷的这种梦想很可能会使你误入歧途，当你认为世间所有的职业都极其平淡乏味，甚至一无是处之时，你也就不适合去从事任何职业了。文学不可能，也不应该成为女人的终生事业。因为，她越是将自己沉浸于文学之中，所得到的乐趣就越少，甚至会把它当作一种技能，或一种消遣。事实上，还未有人要求你去做这些事情，一旦有人吩咐你去做这项工作，你就不会那么渴望成名了。到那时，你根本无法凭借自己的想象去寻求刺激，在这样的境遇之中，世事的变迁，以及你无法摆脱的忧虑都将带给你无穷无尽的烦忧。

你千万不要认为我会轻视你所拥有的天赋，也不要认为我会阻止你施展才华。我只是希望你能够通过慎重的考虑来决定如何发挥自己的才华，以使你终生受益。不要为了完成诗作而去写诗歌，不要一味模仿他人，也不要为功名而作诗；你越是淡薄名利，就越能从中得到享受。这样才能够陶冶情操，愉悦身心；继宗教之后，诗歌极有可能成为安抚心灵，并使之得以升华的最有效的方式。在诗中，你可将自己思想之中的精华和最理智的情感尽情展现，并使它们在创作中得以升华。

再见吧，小姐。我以这样的笔调给你写信，并非因为我已忘记自己也曾经

是个年轻人，恰恰相反，这正是因为我已将此铭记于心。请你不要对我的真诚有所怀疑，也不要曲解我的好意。不论我所说的一切与你的观点和心境有多大的差异，我相信，随着岁月的流逝，你一定会认同我的观点。祝你永远幸福。

你最真诚的朋友罗伯特·骚塞

1837年3月于凯斯维克

Robert Southey to Charlotte Bronte

Keswick, March, 1837.

Madam,

You will probably, ere this, have given up all expectation of receiving an answer to your letter of December 29. I was on the borders of Cornwall when the letter was written; it found me a fortnight afterwards in Hampshire. During my subsequent movements in different parts of the country, and a tarriance of three busy weeks in London, I had no leisure for replying to it; and now that I am once more at home, and am clearing off the arrears of business which have accumulated during a long absence, it has lain unanswered till the last of a numerous file, not from disrespect or indifference to its contents, but because, in truth, it is not an easy task to answer it, nor a pleasant one to cast damp over the high spirits and the generous desires of youth.

What you are I can only infer from your letter, which appears to be written in sincerity, though I may suspect that you have used a fictitious signature. Be that as it may, the letter and the verses bear the same stamp; and I can well understand the state of mind they indicate. What I am you might have learnt by such of my publications as have come into your hands; and had you happened to be acquainted with me, a little personal knowledge would have tempered your enthusiasm. You might have had your ardour in some degree abated by seeing a poet in the decline of life, and witnessing the effect which age produces upon our hopes and aspirations; yet I am neither a disappointed man nor a discontented one, and you would never have heard from me any chilling sermons upon the text "All is vanity."

It is not my advice that you have asked as to the direction of your talents, but my opinion of them; and yet the opinion may be worth little, and the advice much. You evidently possess, and in no inconsiderable degree, what Wordsworth calls the "faculty of verse." I am not depreciating it when I say that in these times it is not rare. Many volumes of poems are now published every year without attracting public attention, any one of which, if it had appeared half a century ago, would have obtained a high repu-

tation for its author. Whoever, therefore, is ambitious of distinction in this way ought to be prepared for disappointment.

But it not with a view to distinction that you should cultivate this talent, if you consult your own happiness. I, who have made literature my profession, and devoted my life to it, and have never for a moment repented of the deliberate choice, think myself, nevertheless, bound in duty to caution every young man who applies as an aspirant to me for encouragement and advice against taking so perilous a course. You will say that a woman has no need of such a caution; there can be no peril in it for her. In a certain sense this is true; but there is a danger of which I would, what all kindness and all earnestness, warn you. The day dreams in which you habitually indulge are likely to induce a distempered state of mind; and, in proportion as all the ordinary uses of the world seem to you flat and unprofitable, you will be unfitted for them without becoming fitted for anything else. Literature cannot be the business of a woman's life, and it ought not to be. The more she is engaged in her proper duties, the less leisure will she have for it, even as an accomplishment and a recreation. To those duties you have not yet been called, and when you are you will be less eager for celebrity. You will not seek in imagination for excitement, of which the vicissitudes of this life, and the anxieties from which you must not hope to be exempted, be your state what it may, will bring with them but too much.

But do not suppose that I disparage the gift which you possess, nor that I would discourage you from exercising it. I only exhort you so to think of it, and so to use it, as to render it conducive to your own permanent good. Write poetry for it own sake; not in a spirit of emulation, and not with a view to celebrity; the less you aim at that the more likely you will be to deserve and finally to obtain it. So written, it is wholesome both for the heart and soul; it may be made the surest means, next to religion, of soothing the mind, and elevating it. You may embody in it your best thoughts and your wisest feelings, and in so doing discipline and strengthen them.

Farewell, madam. It is not because I have forgotten that I was once young myself, that I write to you in this strain; but because I remember it. You will neither doubt my sincerity, nor my goodwill; and, however ill what has here been said may accord with your present views and temper, the longer you live the more reasonable it will appear to you. Though I may be an ungracious adviser, you will allow me, therefore, to subscribe myself, with the best wishes for your happiness here and hereafter,

your true friend
Robert Southey.



1816—1855

夏洛蒂·勃朗特 Charlotte Bronte

英国小说家，她善于以抒情的笔法描写自然景物，作品具有浓厚的感情色彩。1847年，夏洛蒂·勃朗特出版著名的长篇小说《简·爱》，轰动文坛。1848年秋到1849年她的弟弟和两个妹妹相继去世。在死亡的阴影和困惑下，她坚持完成了《谢利》一书，寄托了她对妹妹艾米莉的哀思，并描写了英国早期自发的工人运动。勃朗特的作品主要描写小资产者的孤独、反抗和奋斗，属于被马克思称为以狄更斯为首的"出色的一派"。

这是勃朗特在收到骚塞的信后，写的回信。

夏洛蒂·勃朗特致罗伯特·骚塞的信

先生：

我必须给您回信后再去休息，虽然这是我写给您的第二封信，但我仍觉得有些冒昧，但不管怎样，我必须为您友善而睿智的建议表示感谢。我从未奢求能够收到这样一封如此面面俱到的回信，它不免使人感到精神振奋。我必须控制住自己的情绪，不然，我过分的热情定会使人感到愚蠢。

第一次仔细读过您的来信后，我只感到惭愧和懊悔，我怎么能让您浪费时间审阅我那些拙劣的作品呢！如今，一想到被我写满诗句的手稿，我就感到脸红——曾经使我欣喜万分的诗句，如今只是令我感到迷惑。可是，经过一番仔细的思考，并再次阅读了您的信，我一下子豁然开朗：您并没有说让我停止写作，您没有说我的诗完全没有可读之处。您只是提醒我不要愚蠢地只想着一些荒唐的趣事，而把真正的职责抛在脑后；您告诉我，不要为赢得名声而写作；不要在寻求自我刺激时竭力模仿他人。您善意地建议我，要为诗歌本身而创作，不要把自己应该做的事情放在一边，而只为追求所谓的独一无二、引人入胜、格调优美。先生，也许您觉得我的做法很愚蠢。我知道，我在给您的第一封信中，写的尽是些毫无意义的东西；不过，我与信中所表现出的那个整日游手好闲、异想天开的人并非完全一样。

我父亲是位牧师，收入微薄，仅能使全家人糊口；而我，则是家中的长女。他总是尽心尽力地让我尽可能受到更多的教育，好为其他孩子做个好榜样。因此，当我从学校毕业时，认为自己有义务去做家庭教师。因为这一职业使我必须用整天的时间去思考，去想出解决问题的好办法，这样一来，我便没有时间去胡思乱想。坦白说，到了晚上，我的确在思考，不过我从未让任何一个人受到我思考的影响。平日里，我总是十分谨慎，尽量不让他人看到我聚精会神，或表情古怪，因为这样会使家人猜到我想要追求的东西。依照父亲的忠告——从儿时起父亲就一直给我许多忠告，他语气平和、才思敏捷，这与您来信中的语气完全一致——我一直努力让自己履行一个做子女应尽的职责，并且，要对这些职责表现得非常有兴趣。不过，我并非总是成功。因为，当我在教学，或做针线活的时候，我往往更向往去阅读或写作。即便如此，我依然努力地克制着自己的思绪，这种努力的回报便是父亲的心满意足。在此，请允许我再次向您表示感谢。我不再祈盼着诗作的发表，若不小心再次想起这个心愿，我就会拿出您的信看一看，将这种思绪抑制住。仅仅是给您写信、收到您的信，我就已经心满意足，且引以为荣了。对我而言，这封信是神圣的，除了我和我的家人，谁也别想读它。让我再一次谢谢您吧！我想，这样的事情再也不会发生了，如果哪一天，我已到暮年——也许就在三十年后，我会把它当作一场美丽的梦，永远埋在心底。那个您怀疑不是真名的签名并非是虚构的，因此，我决定再次签下自己的名字。

附言：另外，先生，请原谅我再次给您写信，我忍不住想给您写这封信。一方面，我想告诉您，我对您的好意不胜感激；另一方面，我也想让您知道，虽然最初时，我曾感到非常痛苦，且极不情愿，但您的忠告并没有白费。

夏洛蒂·勃朗特

1837年3月16日

相关链接

勃朗特从小就认定自己会成为伟大的作家，虽然遭到了父亲的反对，她仍义无反顾地走上了文学创作的道路。在未成名时，夏洛蒂曾给骚塞写信，而骚塞也在回信中给予了她一些建议。成名后的勃朗特在回忆这段往事时坦言："骚塞先生的信是和善的、可佩的；虽然有点儿苛刻，可于我有益。"

Charlotte Bronte to Robert Southey

16 March 1837.

Sir,

I cannot rest till I have answered your letter, even though by addressing you a second time I should appear a little **intrusive**[1]; but I must thank you for the kind and wise advice you have **condescended**[2] to give me. I had not ventured to hope for such a reply; so considerate in its tone, so noble in its spirit. I must **suppress**[3] what I feel, or you will think me foolishly enthusiastic.

At the first perusal of you letter I felt only shame and regret that I had ever ventured to trouble you with my crude **rhapsody**[4]; I felt a painful heat rise to my face when I thought of the quires of paper I had covered with what once gave me so much delight, but which now was only a source of confusion; but after I had thought a little, and read it again and again, the prospect seemed to clear. You do not forbid me to write; you do not say that what I write is utterly **destitute**[5] of **merit**[6]. You only warn me against the folly of neglecting real duties for the sake of imaginative pleasures; of writing for the love of fame; for the selfish excitement of **emulation**[7]. You kindly allow me to write poetry for its own sake, provided I leave undone nothing which I ought to do, in order to pursue that single, absorbing, exquisite **gratification**[8]. I am afraid, sir, you think me very foolish. I know the first letter I wrote to you was all senseless **trash**[9] **from beginning to end**[10]; but I am not altogether the idle, dreaming being it would seem to denote.

My father is a **clergyman**[11] of limited though **competent**[12] income, and I am the eldest of his children. He expended quite as much in my education as he could afford in justice to the rest. I thought it therefore my duty, when I left school, to become a **governess**[13]. In that capacity I find enough to occupy my thoughts all day long, and my head and hands too, without having a moment's time for one dream of the imagination. In the evenings, I confess, I do think, but I never trouble any one else with my thoughts. I carefully avoid any appearance of **preoccupation**[14] and **eccentricity**[15], which might lead those I live amongst to suspect the nature of my pursuits. Following my father's advice — who from my childhood has counselled me, just in the wise and friendly tone of your letter — I have endeavoured not only attentively to observe all the duties a woman ought to fulfil, but to feel deeply interested in them. I don't always succeed, for sometimes when I'm teaching or sewing I would rather be reading or writing; but I try to deny myself; and my father's approbation amply rewarded me for the privation. Once more allow me to thank you with sincere gratitude. I trust I shall

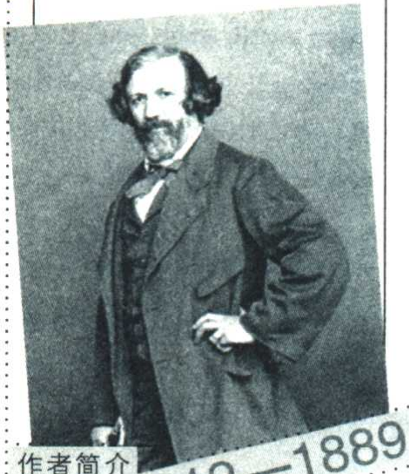
never more feel ambitious to see my name in print; if the wish should rise, I'll look at Southey's letter, and suppress it. It is honour enough for me that I have written to him, and received an answer. That letter is consecrated; no one shall ever see it but papa and my brother and sisters. Again I thank you. This incident, I suppose, will be renewed no more; if I live to be an old woman, I shall remember it thirty years hence as a bright dream. The signature which you suspected of being fictitious is my real name. Again, therefore, I must sign myself: C. Bronte.

P.S. — Pray, sir, excuse me for writing to you a second time; I could not help writing, partly to tell you how thankful I am for your kindness, and partly to let you know that your advice shall not be wasted, however sorrowfully and reluctantly it may at first be followed.

Charlotte Bronte.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. intrusive [in'tru:siv] *adj.* 打扰的，插入的
2. condescend [kɔndi'send] *vi.* 谦逊，屈尊
3. suppress [sə'pres] *vt.* 镇压，抑制
4. rhapsody ['ræpsədi] *n.* 狂想曲
5. destitute ['destitju:t] *adj.* 困穷的，缺乏的
6. merit ['merit] *n.* 优点，价值 *v.* 有益于
7. emulation [ˌemjʊ'leiʃən] *n.* 竞争，效法
8. gratification [ˌgrætifi'keiʃən] *n.* 满意
9. trash [træʃ] *n.* 无价值之物，无聊的作品，垃圾，废物
10. from beginning to end 自始至终
11. clergyman ['klə:dʒimən] *n.* 牧师，教士
12. competent ['kɔmpitənt] *adj.* 有能力的，胜任的
13. governess ['gʌvənis] *n.* 女家庭教师
14. preoccupation [pri(:)ˌɔkju'peiʃən] *n.* 当务之急
15. eccentricity [eksen'trisiti] *n.* 偏心，古怪，[数]离心率，文中"preoccupation and eccentricity"指"聚精会神地想问题，或表现出古怪表情"。



作者简介

1812—1889

罗伯特·勃朗宁

Robert Browning

英国维多利亚时期的代表诗人之一，他以精细入微的心理探索而独步诗坛。勃朗宁对英国诗歌的最大贡献是发展和完善了戏剧独白诗这样一种独特的诗歌形式，并且用它鲜明而生动地塑造了各种不同类型的人物性格，深刻而复杂地展示了人的内在心理，对英美二十世纪的诗歌产生了重要影响。主要作品有《戏剧抒情诗》、《剧中人物》、《指环与书》等。

后来成为其妻的英国女诗人伊丽莎白·芭蕾特1844年出版了第一本诗集，勃朗特读后很是欣赏，随即写了这封信。

罗伯特·勃朗宁致伊丽莎白·勃朗宁的信

亲爱的芭蕾特小姐：

我非常喜欢你的诗——这绝对是我的肺腑之言。此刻我并非在写一封恭维你的信——也不是为了敷衍你，更不是随便夸耀你的才华，这完全是我内心的真实写照。

自从我上个星期初次拜读你的诗作之后，我就一直在想，应该对你谈些什么才能将自己的感受完全表达出来呢？现在想起这件事，我都不由得想笑。当时，我的内心一阵阵地喜悦，并决定必须打破以往的习惯，不只是单纯而被动地欣赏，而应该将自己欣赏诗作的原由说出来——甚至可以把自己当作一个忠实的同伴，试着从诗中找到一些瑕疵，或许对你不无裨益——能够做到一个同行应尽的职责，日后也能为自己平添几分光彩！可是，我却没有从中找出任何缺陷！于是，你笔下那些生动的诗句就深深地印在我心中，渐渐被我吸收、消化，成为我身体里的一部分，犹如一朵娇艳的花在我心中扎根、生长——哦，想想那些被采摘、晾干、压扁，被人们珍爱，夹在附有前言的书本中，然后，被合起来放在书架上的花朵吧——那本书还被人称作《花苑》呢！它们与我心中开出的花

朵又怎能相比啊！

即便找不到合适的言语，我依然不会放弃思索。因为，我对自身具备的某些优点颇有信心——清新脱俗的韵律，华丽的辞藻，凄婉动人的笔调，以及新颖而大胆的想像……不过，此时此刻，我只想对你说——只对你说，我第一次感到心潮澎湃。

正如我之前所说的那样，我非常喜欢你的诗作——也非常喜欢你。我曾经与你近在咫尺，原本想着要与你见面的——可是，我真的看到了吗？——那天清晨，凯宁先生问我："您是否想与芭蕾特小姐见面？" 后来，他告诉我——你的身体很不舒服。如今想来，这件事已过去多年了，我觉得自己像是在一场充满刺激的冒险中，距离那个我想要倾诉一切的人已经非常近了——就像已经来到了某座教堂或地下室的近前，只要掀开门帘就可以看到了，就差那么一点。如今看来，只是这么一点点的距离就足以挡住我前方的路。难道，我从此再也没有机会看到"门帘内"的一切吗？

就到这里吧，由于今天读了你的诗集，我感到非常愉快，并增添了自己的信心。在此，我要对你表达我最真挚的感激。

你真诚的朋友罗伯特·勃朗宁

1845年1月10日于瑟雷郡哈查姆县新十字

Robert Browning to Elizabeth Browning

New Cross, Hatcham, Surrey.
(Post-mark, January 10, 1845.)
Dear Miss Barrett,

I love your verses with all my heart,— and this is no **off-hand**[1] **complimentary**[2] letter that I shall write,— whatever else, no prompt matter-of-course recognition of your genius, and there a graceful and natural end of the thing.

Since the day last week when I first read your poems, I quite laugh to remember how I have been turning and turning again in my mind what I should be able to tell you of their effect upon me, for in the first **flush**[3] of delight I thought I would this once get out of my habit of purely passive enjoyment, when I do really enjoy, and thoroughly justify my admiration-perhaps even, as a loyal fellow-**craftsman**[4] should, try and find fault and do you some little good to be proud of hereafter! — but nothing comes

of it all — so into me has it gone, and part of me has it become, this great living poetry of yours, not a flower of which but took root and grew— Oh, how different that is from lying to be dried and pressed flat, and prized highly, and put in a book with a proper account at top and bottom, and shut up and put away … and the book called a "Flora," besides!

After all, I need not give up the thought of doing that, too, in time; because even a reason for my faith in one and another excellence, the fresh strange music, the **affluent**[5] language, the exquisite pathos and true new brave thought; but in this addressing myself to you — your own self, and for the first time, my feeling rises altogether.

I do, as I say, love these books with all my heart — and I love you too. Do you know I was once not very far from seeing — really seeing you? Mr. Kenyon said to me one morning "Would you like to see Miss Barrett?" then he went to announce me,— then he returned … you were too unwell, and now it is years ago, and I feel as at some **untoward**[6] passage in my travels, as if I had been close, so close, to some now, talking with whoever is worthy, I can give world'swonder in chapel or crypt, only a screen to push and I might have entered, but there was some slight, so it now seems, slight and just sufficient bar to **admission**[7], and the half-opened door shut, and I went home my thousands of miles, and the sight was never to be?

Well, these poems were to be, and this true thankful joy and pride with which I feel myself.

Yours ever **faithfully**[8]
Robert Browning.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. off-hand (=of hand) *adv.* 不客气的,未经准备的
2. complimentary [ˌkɔmpliˈment(ə)ri] *adj.* 问题的,称赞的,夸奖的
3. flush [flʌʃ] *n.* 激动,活力旺盛,文中"flush of delight"指一阵阵的喜悦。
4. craftsman [ˈkrɑːftsmən] *n.* 工匠,手艺精巧的人,艺术家
5. affluent [ˈæfluənt] *adj.* 丰富的,富裕的
6. untoward [ʌnˈtəuəd] *adj.* 倔强的,麻烦的,困难的,不幸的
7. admission [ədˈmiʃən] *n.* 允许进入,供认
8. faithfully [ˈfeiθfuli] *adv.* 忠实,诚心诚意



1806—1861

伊丽莎白·勃朗宁 Elizabeth Browning

英国著名女诗人。出生在英格兰北部的达翰姆。她从小热爱自然，钟情艺术，尤其崇尚希腊古典文学。15岁时不幸坠马受伤，从此长期卧病在床，成了在痛苦中煎熬的"蛰居者"。但她仍以天赋的才华和坚忍的毅力进行文学创作和翻译，10余年间出版两部诗集，成为与丁尼生齐名的诗人。

本文是伊丽莎白于1945年1月11日写给勃朗宁的回信。在信中，伊丽莎白表达了想与勃朗宁进行艺术交流的意愿，并隐隐流露出对勃朗宁的爱恋——想见面，却又怕"相见不如怀念"。读来颇有意味。

伊丽莎白·勃朗宁致罗伯特·勃朗宁的信

亲爱的勃朗宁先生：

在此，我向您致以由衷的感谢。您给我写信的目的是想为我带来欢乐——虽然这一愿望未能达成，我依然要感谢您。事实上，您的信已经深深地打动了我。这封信对我而言是弥足珍贵的；而且，能够得到一位出色的诗人给予我的同情，我受宠若惊。您愿意接受我对您的感激之情吗？也许您会对这样的说法表示赞同——从提尔到迦太基，乃至全世界，以同情之心换取感激之情是最崇高的事情！

此外，您耐心地鼓励我。当您使他人得到快乐时，他们往往想从您那里寻找到更多的快乐，因此您很难将他们摆脱掉——事实正是如此，可我们却把这当成了义不容辞的责任。犹豫再三，我还是决定向您坦露心声——在您方便的时候，能否将我诗作之中的败笔之处一一指出？那定会令我终生受益——当然，我并不想麻烦您为我作详细点评。对于您提出的意见和建议，我一定会倍加珍惜，希望能够早日得到您的赐教。

在受到您的批评之时，我不会掩饰自己的真实情感，装出一副虚心受教的模样。也许有些点评是我根本无法接受的，不过，我深深地折服于您的艺术才华和您多年来的写作经验。因此，您的指点必定会使我今后的诗歌创作大

有长进。你只需为我作一两句点评即可，——也许有些强求——但我是带着谦恭之心向您低声祈求的——这是女人在有求于人时的一惯表现。

大多数情况下别人给予我的批评都与我的写作风格有关——“但愿你能改变自己的写作风格！”可是，他们是否意在批评作者呢？布封说过：“风格即人。”——我相信，每位作家都会有同感。然而，批评家们在作文学评论时却很少会考虑到这一点。

我是否真能有幸与您相识？您是否也曾为错失良机而感到遗憾？可是，您要知道，一旦走入那座“地窟”，您极有可能患上感冒，甚至会闷得要死，您一定想置身于千里之外，这种感受要比走上一千里路所带来的艰辛更令人难以承受。我不想让您对我有一种“急于求成”的印象；反倒期望失去的机会能够在今后的某个时候得到补偿。到了冬天，我常常像睡鼠冬眠一样足不出户；到了春天，我们就能相见了，而我，也会在外面的世界中寻找到新的欢乐——我的模样自然会比现在好很多。同时，我已从您诗作之中所蕴含的温情领悟到您真正想要表达的东西。敬爱的凯尼恩先生经常提到您，怎样来形容他呢？也许，噙着眼泪说，一直以来，他始终是我和我的诗作不可或缺的朋友和帮手！批评家和同情者，是永远的知心朋友！我想，您一定非常了解他，因而您一定能够理解我对他的感激之情。

我已经写得太多了，尽管如此，我还是想再向您提一件事。我想说的是，也许我欠你太多，不仅是您那封诚挚的信和它所带给我的欢乐，还有最为重要的一面：我为诗歌而生，为了能够更好地追求诗歌写作这一神圣的艺术，我一定会虔诚地欣赏并仔细研究您的诗作。我终于将心里的话语和盘托出了。

您忠实的朋友伊丽莎白

1845年1月11日于温布尔街50号

相关链接

伊丽莎白与勃朗宁因诗而结缘后，两人从此开始频繁的书信往来。在勃朗宁的多次要求下，两人有了第一次见面。三天后，抑制不住强烈感情的勃朗宁竟给伊丽莎白写了一封求婚信。39岁的女诗人卧床已有24年，她认为自己不可能嫁给比她小6岁的勃朗宁，便拒绝了他。尽管如此，两人依然保持亲密的交往。后来，奇迹发生了，伊丽莎白突然能下地自由行走了，并且勇敢地投入到勃朗宁的怀抱。

Elizabeth Browning to Robert Browning

50 Wimpole Street.

Jan. 11, 1845.

I thank you, dear Mr. Browning, **from the bottom of my heart**[1]. You meant to give me pleasure by your letter — and even if the object had not been answered, I ought still to thank you. But it is **thoroughly**[2] answered. Such a letter from such a hand! Sympathy is dear — very dear to me: but the sympathy of a poet, and of such a poet, is the quintessence of sympathy of me! Will you take back my gratitude for it? agreeing, too, that of all the commerce done in the world, from Tyre to Carthage, the exchange of sympathy for gratitude is the most princely thing?

For the rest you draw me on with your kindness. It is difficult to get rid of people when you once have given them too much pleasure — that is a fact, and we will not stop for the **moral**[3] of it. What I was going to say — after a little natural **hesitation**[4] — is, that if ever you emerge without inconvenient effort from your "passive state", and will tell me of such faults as rise to the surface and strike you as important in my poems, (for of course, I do not think of troubling you with criticism in detail) you will confer a lasting obligation on me, and one which I shall value so much, that I covet it at a distance.

I do not pretend to any extraordinary **meek**[5]ness under criticism and it is possible enough that I might not be altogether obedient to yours. But with my high respect for your power in your art and for your experience as an artist, it would be quite impossible for me to hear a general observation of yours on what appear to you my master-faults without being the better for it hereafter in some way. I ask for only a sentence or two of general observation — and I do not ask even for that, so as to tease you — but in the humble, low voice, which is so excellent a thing in women — particularly when they go abegging!

The most frequent general criticism I receive, is, I think, upon the style, — "if I would but change my style! " But that is an **objection**[6] (isn't it?) to the writer bodily? Buffon says, and every sincere writer must fell, that Le style c'est l'homme; a fact, however, scarcely **calculated**[7] to lessen the objection with certain critics.

Is in indeed true that I was so near to the pleasure and honour of making your **acquaintance**[8]? And can it be true that you look back upon the lost opportunity with any regret? But you know if you had entered the "**crypt**"[9], you might have caught cold, or been tired to death, and wished yourself "a thousand miles off"; which would have been worse than traveling them. It is not my interest, however, to put such thoughts in

your head about its being "all for the best"; and I would rather hope (as I do) that what I lost by one chance I may recover by some future one. Winters shut me up as they do **dormouse**[10]'s eyes; in the spring, we shall see: and I am so much better than I seem turning round to the outward world again. And in the meantime I have learnt to know your voice, not merely from the poetry but from the kindness in it. Mr. Kenyon often speaks of you — dear Mr. Kenyon! who most unspeakably, of only speakably with tears in my eyes, — has been my friend and helper, and my book's friend and helper! Critic and **sympathizer**[11], true friend of all ours! You know him well enough, I think, to understand that I must be grateful to him.

I am writing too much, — and not with standing that I am writing too much, I will write of one thing more. I will say that I am your debtor, no only for this **cordial**[12] letter and for all the pleasure which came with it, but in other ways, and those the highest: and I will say that while I live to follow this divine art of poetry. **In proportion**[13] to my love for it and my devotion to it, I must be a devout admirer and student of your works. This is in my heart to say to you — and I say it.

Your obliged and faithful
Elizabeth.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. from the bottom of my heart 指"由心底里发出的"。
2. thoroughly ['θʌrəli] *adv.* 十分地,彻底地
3. moral ['mɔrəl] *adj.* 道德上的,精神的
4. hesitation [ˌhezi'teiʃən] *n.* 犹豫,踌躇
5. meek [miːk] *adj.* 温顺的,谦恭的,文中 meekness 为该词的名词形式。
6. objection [əb'dʒekʃən] *n.* 异议,缺陷,妨碍,文中指"批评"。
7. calculate ['kælkjuleit] *v.* 计算,考虑,计划,打算 *v.* 以为,认为
8. acquaintance [ə'kweintəns] *n.* 相识,熟人
9. crypt [kript] *n.* 土窖,地下室,地穴
10. dormouse ['dɔːmaus] *n.* 冬眠鼠
11. sympathize ['simpəθaiz] *vi.* 同情,共鸣,同感,文中 sympathizer 指"支持者"。
12. cordial ['kɔːdiəl] *n.* 兴奋剂,兴奋性饮料
13. in proportion 相称



温斯顿·丘吉尔致妻子的信

作者简介

1874—1965

温斯顿·丘吉尔

Winston Churchill

英国政治家、演说家及作家。曾两度出任英国首相，是20世纪最重要的政治领袖之一。他出生于牛津附近，曾就读于著名的哈罗军校。1899年，丘吉尔退伍参政，开始了他辉煌的政治生涯。他多才多艺，在历史著述和传记写作方面成就卓著。1953年，“由于他在描述历史与传记方面的造诣，同时由于他那捍卫崇高的人的价值的光辉演说”而获得当年的诺贝尔文学奖，被瑞典皇家科学院称为“具有西塞罗文才的凯撒大帝”。

这是丘吉尔在外地休假时写给妻子的信。从信中我们可以明白一个道理：再伟大的人物，在家人面前也是一个有血有肉的普通人。

我最亲爱的：

亚历克斯和他的副官——坦普莫尔勋爵的儿子，在我们这里住了两晚之后，已经走了。我希望亚历克斯下周末能再来。他十分喜欢绘画，而且还画了一幅很不错的画，这也是他从学习绘画至今六年来画的最出色的画。我现在已经有了四幅作品，其中三幅还是大幅的；说实话，我真的认为这是迄今为止我画得最好的画。我把你的情况告诉了亚历克斯，他听后很高兴。

对我来说，绘画真是其乐无穷，使我忘记了一切烦恼。绘画是一种神奇的疗法，因为它可以使人消除一切杂念。今天是星期六，从我们出发至今已经一个星期了，可直到星期三我们才收到一些报纸。我浏览了一下这些报纸，感觉似乎我们必将经历一段艰难的日子。我感到我们的政府并没有在裁军问题上尽最大的努力，也没有重新大力开展我们的贸易。我不知道我们究竟应该如何去偿还债务，更不知道怎样才能不增加负债。即使我们全部组成一个联盟，集中起全国的所有力量，也无法完成我们所面临的任务。不过，这一切似乎

离我很遥远，身处在这片美丽的湖上，每天所感受到的几乎都是明媚的阳光和清爽的天气。

你的那封有趣且惊险的乌德福之旅的信，比报纸可好看得多。我想知道我们的事情进展得怎么样了，真希望你不要为这些事给自己太多的压力。我们当然不会忘记玛丽的生日，不过你要告诉我你准备了什么礼物。

这样的日子虽然很轻松愉快，但仍感觉过得很慢；虽然每天过得都很有趣、充实，但依然觉得我们来这里似乎已经很长时间了。我把那间大浴室改成了带有临时画架的画室，今天一上午亚历克斯和我都在那里努力完成昨天的画。他决定在这里的一个海角处买一幢别墅。从外表上看，这幢别墅确实是人们所能想象到的最漂亮的住宅，我没有见过别墅的内部装饰风格，但听说非常浪漫，充满了十五世纪情调。不过，当我告诉他已经多年不允许私自购买外国地产时，他有点惊讶。

亚历克斯说如果我愿意的话，他希望我继续住在这儿，但我想十八日或十九日就回来。我在考虑途中是否应在巴黎逗留，但我多么希望再过十天或十一天之后就能回到我渴望已久的家中。萨拉给我们带来了极大的快乐，她和每个人都相处得很好。我们俩一起驾驶快艇在湖上飞驰，非常惊险、刺激，但比起意大利职业赛车手在条件恶劣的崎岖小路上全方位、全速驾驶小汽车或卡车，可要安全多了。

查尔斯大多数时间都在打高尔夫球。这里有一个很漂亮的高尔夫球场，他有时自己打，有时和奥吉尔打。他对我的悉心照顾使我深为感动。

很高兴今天收到了你的电报，想必你也对自己精心策划的电文格式感到好笑吧。

亲爱的，我非常想念你。昨晚当我驾着快艇返航时，脑海中回荡的便是你多年前唱给我的一首歌《黄昏》。多么动听的歌！多么优美的曲调！你唱得又是那么哀婉动人！我的心在颤抖，真挚的爱使我感觉你就在我的身边，你是那样温柔！亲爱的，这里的景色越是赏心悦目，我就越希望你能在这里与我共同分享这一切。来吻我吧！

你看，我几乎不知道如何拿笔了，我一定写得很乱吧？

雷顿小姐已经收到了她“男朋友”从南非来的信。如果有可能，她会立即去南非(不是加拿大)与他结婚，因此她非常高兴。昨天几个南非官员从旅馆来把她带到一架停在他们的快艇后面的“水上飞机”上。她在水面上盘旋着，在别墅的前方绕了三个大圈才落下来，真是太美了！萨拉现在正在给你写信。

晚餐铃响了。

永远爱你的丈夫温

Winston Churchill to His Wife

My dearest one,

Alex and his aide-de-camp, who is the son of Lord Templemore, have left us after staying two nights. I hope Alex will come back again next weekend. He certainly enjoyed himself painting, and produced a very good picture considering it is the first time that he has handled a brush for six years. I have now four pictures, three of them large, in an advanced state, and I honestly think they are better than any I have painted so far. I gave Alex your message and he was very pleased.

The painting has been a great pleasure to me, and I have really forgotten all my vexations. It is a wonderful cure, because you really cannot think of anything else. This is Saturday, and it is a week since we started. We have had newspapers up till Wednesday. I have skimmed through them, and it certainly seems we are going to have a pretty hard time. I cannot feel the Government are doing enough about demobilization, still less about getting our trade on the move again. I do not know how we are ever to pay our debts, and it is even difficult to see how we shall pay our way. Even if we were all united in a Coalition, gathering all the strength of the nation, our task might well be beyond our powers. However, all this seems already quite remote from me on this lovely lake, where nearly all the days are full of sunshine and the weather bright and cool.

Much better than the newspapers was your letter, with its amusing but rather macabre account of the journey to Woodford. I am longing to hear how our affairs are progressing. I do hope you are not overtaxing yourself with all the business that there is to do. We shall certainly not forget about Mary's birthday; but let me know what you have done about a present.

Considering how pleasant and delightful the days have been, I cannot say they have passed quickly. It seems quite a long time since I arrived, although every day has been full of interest and occupation. I have converted my enormous bathroom into a studio with makeshift easels, and there all this morning Alex and I tried to put the finishing touches on our pictures of yesterday. He has set his heart on buying a villa here on a promontory. I have not seen it inside, but from the outside it looks the most beautiful abode one can possibly imagine, and I understand that inside it is even more romantic, going back to the fifteenth century. He was a little startled when I pointed

out to him that no one will be allowed to buy a foreign property across the exchange perhaps for many years.

He begged me to stay on here as long as I like, but I think I shall come back the 18th or 19th. I am doubtful whether I shall stop in Paris. I expect in another ten or eleven days I shall be very keen to get home again. Sarah has been a great joy, and gets on with everybody. She and I both drive the speed – boats. They are a wonderful way of getting about this lake, and far safer than the awful winding roads around which the Italians career with motorcars and lorries at all sorts of speeds and angles.

Charles plays golf most days. There is a very pretty link here, and he has fierce contests with himself or against Ogier. His devoted care of me is deeply touching.

You maybe amused to see the elaborate form in which your telegram, which I rejoiced to receive today, was sent.



温斯顿·丘吉尔与妻子终生相亲相爱，生活非常美满，这在英国政治家中是十分少见的。图为两个人在一起看报纸。

My Darling I think a great deal of you and last night when I was driving the speed-boat back there came into my mind your singing to me 'In the Gloaming' years ago. What a sweet song and tune and how beautifully you sang it in all its pathos. My heart thrills and I love to feel you near me in thought. I feel so tenderly towards you my darling and the more pleasant and agreeable the scenes and days, the more I wish you were here to share them and give me a kiss.

You see I have nearly forgotten how to write with a pen. Isn't awful my scribbles?

Miss Layton has heard from her "boy-friend" in S. Africa that she is to go out there (not Canada) immediately if possible to marry him. So she is very happy. Yesterday the South African officers came from their hotel and took her out to "water-plane" behind their speed boat. She looked very handsome whirling along in the water and made three large circles in front of the villa before she tumbled in. Sarah is writing you now. The DB is starting.

Always your loving husband.

这封信是丘吉尔在女儿快过生日时写给她的。从信的字里行间可以看出，他对女儿深深的爱。

温斯顿·丘吉尔致女儿的信

◎ [英] 温斯顿·丘吉尔 Winston Churchill

亲爱的玛丽：

“生日快乐！”这封信你在十五日那天应该可以收到，但无论它迟到或是早到，都带着你父亲的一片最深切的爱。我一直以赞赏与尊重的目光关注着你在艰苦的战争岁月中所成就的非凡业绩及肩负的责任；我也期待着在未来的和平日子里能看到你的幸福与荣耀。你是你母亲和我的巨大快乐，我们盼望着很快你就能和我们在恰特威尔或伦敦的新居里共同生活。

这里阳光明媚，一片宁静。我每天都沉浸在绘画的快乐之中，而且一画就是一整天，驱散了我所有的烦恼。亚历克斯也来这里作过画，他人非常不错。蒙太格先生曾来过几天，为我点评与指导。迄今为止，我已经有三幅比较满意的作品，现在我准备出去为另一幅画选景。萨拉也在给你写信。

爱你的父亲

温斯顿·丘吉尔

相关链接

1965年1月24日，丘吉尔因中风逝世，享年九十一岁。英国政府为丘吉尔举行了国葬，并根据丘吉尔的遗愿，在仪式结束后，灵柩用游艇运到滑铁卢火车站，在那里鸣礼炮十九响，然后用火车把灵柩运到他的出生地布伦海姆宫附近的教堂中，与他的父母葬在一起。直到今天，丘吉尔仍被英国人视为最伟大的首相，在2002年的“最伟大的一百名英国人”票选活动中，丘吉尔高居榜首。

Winston Churchill to His Daughter

My darling Mary,

"**Many Happy Returns of the Day**[1]." This should reach you on your Birthday the 15th: but if it comes earlier or later it carries with it the fondest love of your father. I have watched with admiration and respect the career of distinction and duty which you have made for yourself during the hard years of the war. I **look forward**[2] in the days that maybe left me to see you happy and glorious in peace. You are a great joy to your mother and me and we are hoping that very soon you will be living with us at Chartwell and in our new house in London. It will be lovely having you with us.

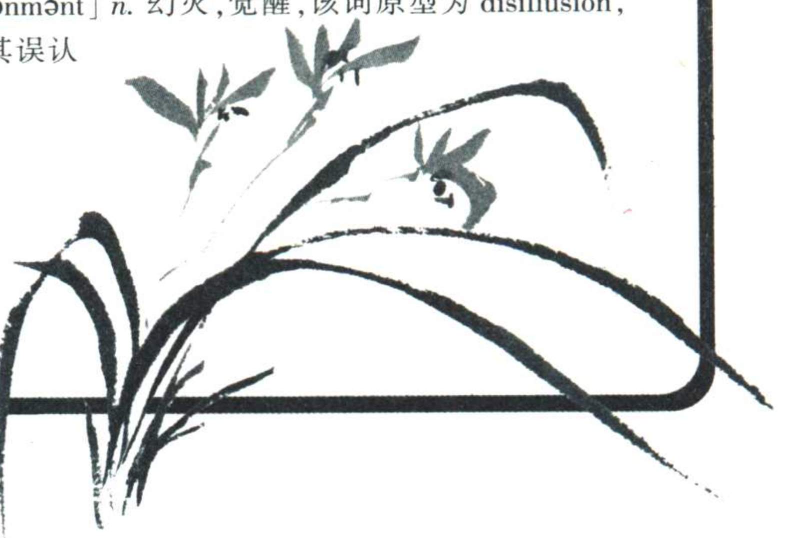
Here it is sunshine and calm. I paint all day and every day and have banished careand **disillusionment**[3] to the shades. Alex came and painted too. He is very good. Monsieur Montag is coming to comment and guide me in a few days. I have three nice Pictures so far,and I am now off to seek for another. Sarah is writing you herself.

With all my affection

Your loving Father
Winston Churchill.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. "Many Happy Returns of the Day"是一种常用的祝福语，文中丘吉尔用这句话来祝福女儿生日快乐。
2. look forward 盼望，期望
3. disillusionment [ˌdisiˈljuːʒənmənt] *n.* 幻灭，觉醒，该词原型为 disillusion，为动词形式，千万不要将其误认为名词形式。





作者简介 1792—1822

珀西·比希·雪莱

Percy Bysshe Shelley

英国著名诗人。出身乡村地主家庭，曾就读于牛津大学，因写反宗教的哲学论文被学校开除。投身社会后，又因写诗歌鼓动英国人民革命及支持爱尔兰民族民主运动，而被迫迁居意大利。在意大利，他仍积极支持意大利人民的民族解放斗争，1822年渡海时遇上风暴，不幸溺水而亡。

雪莱是欧洲著名的浪漫主义诗人，其作品热情而富含哲理，诗风自由不羁，又惯用象征手法和远古神话题材。他的代表作有长诗《仙后麦布》、幻想性抒情故事诗《伊斯兰的反叛》、诗剧《解放了的普罗米修斯》等。

本文从内容上看是一封热恋时期的情书。在作者看来，爱是"第六感觉"，是超越一切的东西。如果把爱看成是肉欲、情欲，那就是"自私自利的爱"，那就是对爱的亵渎，体现了作者超凡的爱情观。

雪莱致伊丽莎白·西琴勒的信

我刚刚收到了你于本月一号写给我的信，于是便依约复信给你——我绝不会失约。正如我们早晨动身时所说的——我们的思绪真可谓是变化无常啊！谁能想象到我上次写信时的心境呢？我的挚友啊，我只能说，那种心境太可怕，太令人沮丧了。它曾一度使我心灰意冷……亲爱的，现在我又完全属于你了，幸福之感再度涌上心头，我又一次找回了自信。我相信，任何一个人在这种时候都会有相同的感受，当一息尚存之时，谁又会对眼前的一切不闻不问呢？同样，我的第六感怎能对这一切无动于衷，我最亲爱的朋友，你能宽恕我吗？我已将自己的灵魂都献给了你。我曾几度举笔，可笔却不听使唤。此时，我再次恢复了理智；而且，你的信已深深地影响了我。你从不认为我们会失去联系，这样的情感为我带来了生命的曙光。它是洒在我阴郁而漫长的人生旅途之上的一缕希望之光。偏见也许会要求人们做出牺牲，但那不过是个幻象，你我都不会向它屈服。这个世界也许会要求我们做出牺牲，舆论也会提出某些要求；可是，遥望那飘过远方山岭的云彩，不也会令我们乐

在其中吗？是的，只要一息尚存，我决不会屈服，决不会低头；即使光阴将我们列入别离的名单之中，我们仍会在天堂重聚。什么是爱情？什么是友情？难道它可以像球、苹果、玩偶等等随意送给他人吗？难道它无法再发展下去，无法自由交流吗？凯莫斯勋爵将爱情定义为“一种激情”。可是他所说的只是肉欲之爱，情欲之爱——是荒谬绝伦的逢场作戏，只配称作寻欢作乐！那并不是充满幸福的爱。这是一种自私自利的爱，它只求利己，是嫉妒之源，其目的就是占有自己想拥有的玩物而已。自私、垄断就是它的本质。这种“爱”简直就是对真爱的亵渎！还不如让这根“稻草”及早消失。可是，我们所崇尚的爱，是象征着美德、神圣和无私的精神。总而言之，这样的真情即使是飘在远山上方的云朵也能令我们息息相通；这样的真情追求的是彼此的幸福——那并不是为了回报对方给予你的欢乐，而是因为有一种无形的力量和情感使你只想为对方无私地付出这即是真爱所具有的美德。是的，我们并不是因为惧怕下地狱，或为了升入天堂而为他人谋求幸福，而是出于纯朴的美德。不久后你就能收到我的信了。再见了，我最亲爱的朋友。请你相信，如若对你不忠，我必遭天谴。

Percy Bysshe Shelley to Elizabeth Hitchhiker

Your letter of the 1st **hath**[1] this moment reached me. I answer it according to our agreement, which shall be **inviolable**[2]. Truly did you say that, at our arising in the morning, Nature assumes a different aspect. Who could have **conjectured**[3] the circumstances of my last letter? Friend of my soul, this is terrible, dismaying: it makes one's heart sink, it withers vital energy … dear being, I am thine again; the happiness shall again predominate over this fleeting **tribute**[4] to self-interest. Yet who would not feel now? Oh't were as reckless a task to endeavor to **annihilate**[5] perception while sense existed, as to **blunt**[6] the **sixth sense**[7] to such impressions as these! … Forgive me, dearest friend? I pour out my whole soul to you. I write by fleeting intervals: my pen runs away with my senses. The **impassionateness**[8] of my sensations grows upon me. Your letter, too, has much affected me. Never, with my consent, shall that **intercourse**[9] cease which has been the day — dawn of my existence, the sun which has shed warmth on the cold drear length of the anticipated prospect of life. Prejudice might demand the sacrifice, but she is an idol to whom we bow not. The world might demand it; its opinion might require; but the cloud which flees over yon mountain were as important to our happiness, to our usefulness. This must never be, never whilst this existence continues; and when time has enrolled us in the list of the departed, surely this

friendship will survive to bear our identity to heaven. What is love, or friendship? Is it something material … a ball, an apple, a plaything … which must be taken from one to be given to another? Is it capable of no extension, no communication? Lord Kaimes defines love to be a particularization of the general passion. But this is the love of sensation, of sentiment … the absurdest of absurd vanities: it is the love of pleasure, not the love of happiness. The one is a love which is selfcentered, self-interested: It desires its own interest; it is the parent of jealousy. Its object is the plaything which it desires to monopolize. **Selfishness**[10], **monopoly**[11], is **its very soul**[12], and to communicate to others part of this love were to destroy its essence, to annihilate this chain of straw. But love, the love which we worship, … virtue, heaven, disinterestedness … in a word, Friendship … which has as much to do with the senses as with yonder mountains; that which seeks the good of all … the good of its object first, not because that object is a minister to its Pleasures, not merely because it even contributes to its happiness, but because it is really worthy, because it has powers, **sensibilities**[13], is capable of abstracting itself, and loving virtue's own loveliness … desiring the happiness of others not from the obligation of fearing the happiness of others not from the obligation of fearing hell or desiring heaven: but for pure, simple, unsophisticated virtue. You will soon hear again. Adieu, my dearest friend. Continue to believe that when I am insensible to your excellence, I shall cease to exist.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. hath [hæθ] *v.* 〈废〉have 的第三人称单数现在式
2. inviolable [in'vaiələbl] *adj.* 神圣的，不可亵渎的，该词词根为"in"，去掉"in"即 violabe，则意为易受侵犯的，与前面的释意刚好相反，需注意。
3. conjecture [kən'dʒektʃə] *n. v.* 推测，臆想（文中为动词）。
4. tribute ['tribjuːt] *n.* 贡品，礼物
5. annihilate [ə'naiəleit] *vt.* 消灭，歼灭
6. blunt [blʌnt] *adj.* 钝的，生硬的
7. sixth sense *n.* 第六感，直觉
8. impassion [im'pæʃən] *vt.* 激动，激起热情
9. intercourse ['intə(ː)kɔːs] *n.* 交往，交流
10. selfish ['selfiʃ] *adj.* 自私的，selfishness 自私自利是名词形式。
11. monopoly [mə'nɔpəli] *n.* 垄断，垄断者，专利权，文中意为"垄断"。
12. its very soul 在文中指"它的本质"。
13. sensibility [ˌsensi'biliti] *n.* 敏感性

雪莱与济慈是文友，他们常常通过书信切磋诗歌艺术、交流创作心得，结下了深厚的友情。济慈的长诗《安狄米恩》发表后，遭到了保守势力的谩骂和攻击，给病中的济慈以致命的打击。雪莱在意大利闻讯后，立即给济慈写了这封信，表达了他的关切与爱护。

雪莱致济慈的信

◎［英］珀西·比希·雪莱 Percy Bysshe Shelley

亲爱的济慈：

当吉斯朋先生告诉我你遭遇不幸的消息时，我感到万分悲痛。除此之外，他还对我说，至今你的脸上还有肺病患者的气色。肺结核这种病尤其喜欢像你这样出色的诗人；加之英国的冬天寒气肆虐，更助长了它的嚣张气焰，它不断地选择"意中人"。我觉得像你这样亲切的诗人没有义务满足它的胃口，它们并没有和缪斯签订这种契约。

不过，严肃说来——我正拿自己所关注的事开心呢，我认为你遭遇这次极其严重的事件之后，来意大利过冬是大有裨益的。如果你认为我说的有道理，而且觉得比萨这个地方很惬意的话，我和夫人都希望你能早日来此，到寒舍一聚。你可以乘船到来亨（法国不值得一游，不过，航海对肺部虚弱的人特别有好处），那儿距我们这里不过几英里。不管怎样，你都应该到意大利游历一番，至于我所提及的休养一说，不过是个借口而已。

我还没有向你提及这里的雕塑、绘画和各种古迹呢，更值得一提的还有诸多名山大川、田野、天空多变的色彩和无云的苍穹。

近来我拜读了你笔下的长诗——《安狄米恩》，其中蕴含着大量的诗歌精华，它们如同泉水倾泻而下，令人目不暇接。我觉得普通人很难认真地读下去，这也正是它销路不畅的原因。我深信，你一定能够大有作为，只要你能够做到矢志不渝。

我一再嘱咐奥立尔把我的书寄给你——就是那本《解放了的普罗米修斯》。我想，那本书应该和这封信同时到你那儿。《珊奇》你应该已经收到了吧？——

写作时我运用了一种独特的风格，让我费了不少心血——“比上不足，比下有余”。在诗作中，我坚持要打破常规和个人癖好；我希望比我更具天赋的诗人也能够独辟蹊径。

无论你留在英国还是到意大利来，请你一定要相信：无论你身在何方，做些什么事，我都会为你祝福，祈盼你能早日康复，心情愉快，事业有成。

你诚挚的P.B.雪莱

1820年7月27日于比萨

相关链接

1822年7月8日，雪莱渡海途中突然遭遇风暴，船被吹翻，夺去了诗人年仅30岁的生命。雪莱的尸体火化后，骨灰被送往罗马，安葬在塞斯乌斯的金字塔旁的新教徒公墓，墓地上立了一块标志诗人埋葬处的石碑，碑上刻着诗人的姓名：珀西·比希·雪莱，他的姓名底下还刻有这样两个拉丁词：众心之心。这简洁的铭文是他的妻子玛丽对他的品格所作的鉴定，也是对雪莱一生最真实、最深刻的赞语。

Percy Bysshe Shelley to Keats

Pisa, July 27th,1820.

My dear Keats,

I hear with great pain the dangerous accident that you have undergone, Mr Gisborne who gives me the account of it, adds, that you continue to wear a consumptive appearance. This **consumption**[1] is a disease particularly fond of people who write such good verses as you have done, and with the assistance of an English writer it can often indulge its selection;— I do not think that young and **amiable**[2] poets are at all bound to **gratify**[3] its taste; they have entered into no bond with the Muses to that effect.

But seriously (for I am joking on what I am very anxious about) I think you would do well to pass the winter after so **tremendous an accident**[4] in Italy,and (if you think it as necessary as I do) so long as you could find Pisa or its neighbourhood agreeable to you, Mrs. Shelley unites with myself in urging the request, that you would take up your residence with us. — You might come by sea to Leghorn, (France is not worth seeing,and the sea air is particularly good for weak lungs) which is within a few miles of us. You ought at all events to see Italy,and your health which I suggest as a

motive, might be an excuse to you.

I spare declamation about the statues and the paintings and the ruins — and what is a greater piece of **forbearance**[5] — about the mountains the streamsand the fields, the colours of the sky,and the sky itself.

I have lately read you Endymion againand ever with a new sense of the treasures of poetry it contains, though treasures poured forth with indistinct profusion. This, people in general will not **endure**[6], and that is the cause of the **comparatively**[7] few copies which have been sold. — I feel persuaded that you are capable of the greatest things, so you but will.

I always tell Ollier to send you Copies of my books. — "**Prometheus**[8] **Unbound**[9]" I imagine you will receive nearly at the same time with this letter. The Cenci I hope you have already received — it was studiously composed in a different style "below the good how far! but far above the great". In poetry I have sought to avoid system and **mannerism**[10]; I wish those who excel me in genius, would pursue the same plan.

Whether you remain in England, or journey to Italy, — believe that you carry with you my anxious wishes for your health happiness and success, **wherever you are or whatever you undertake**[11] — and that I am.

Yours sincerely
P.B. Shelley.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. consumption [kən'sʌmpʃən] *n.* 肺病
2. amiable ['eimjəbl] *adj.* 亲切的，和蔼可亲的
3. gratify ['grætifai] *vt.* 使满足
4. tremendous an accident tremendous 原为巨大之意，但在"tremendous an accident"中则为"严重之意，即严重的事件"。
5. forbearance [fɔː'bεərəns] *n.* 自测，忍耐
6. endure [in'djuə] *v.* 耐久，忍耐
7. comparatively [kəm'pærətivli] *adv.* 比较地，相当地
8. Prometheus [prə'miθjuːs] *n.* [希腊]普罗米修斯(造福于人类的神)
9. unbound ['ʌn'baund] *adj.* 已获自由的
10. mannerism ['mænərizəm] *n.* (言语，写作中的)特殊习惯，怪癖
11. wherever you are or whatever you undertake "无论你身在何方，无论你做什么。"



济慈致雪莱的信

作者简介

1795—1821

约翰·济慈

John Keats

英国诗人。他出生于伦敦，自幼喜爱文学，但由于家境窘困，16岁时他就被迫离校学医。后来济慈认识了李·亨特、雪莱等著名诗人，从此走上了诗歌创作的道路，并最终成为英国文坛上一颗光彩夺目的巨星。济慈的早期诗作收集在1817年3月出版的第一本《诗集》中。1818年到1820年是济慈诗歌创作的鼎盛时期，他先后完成了《伊莎贝拉》、《圣亚尼节前夜》、《许佩里恩》等著名长诗，最脍炙人口的《夜莺颂》、《希腊古瓮颂》、《秋颂》等名篇也是在这一时期内写成的。济慈诗才横溢，与雪莱、拜伦齐名。他的一生是短暂的，可是他遗下的诗篇完美地体现了西方浪漫主义诗歌的特色，并被誉为“欧洲浪漫主义运动的杰出代表”。

本文是济慈收到雪莱的信后，写给雪莱的回信。

亲爱的雪莱：

你的来信使我感激万分，你身在他乡，却记挂着远方的朋友，还给我写了一封关怀备至的信，这使我感到十分欣慰。如果我无法应邀前去，必定是我意料之中的事成为了现实！无疑，英国的冬天势必会夺走我的命；而且，还会是以一种极度痛苦的方式结束我的生命。因此，无论从水路还是从陆路出发，我一定要到意大利去，这与一名战士奔赴战场无异。

对我而言，此刻最糟糕的问题就是神经紧张。不过，我已经下定决心，无论生死都不能在一个地方停留太久，以免对所有的四柱床都产生厌恶感。想到这些，我的紧张情绪就会有所松弛。没想到你对我的诗作如此厚爱，深感荣幸。如果我还能如从前那样注重声誉的话，我情愿把它毁掉。我已从亨特那里拿到了《珊奇》复本，虽经过亨特转交，我依然觉得是你亲自送来的。我想，我只具备一种资格——那就是对诗的意境和生动性方面进行评论的资格——在我看来，许多人已把这两者当成了摇钱树。

据说，一部成功的现代作品必须带有写作目的，也许就是所谓的"上帝"吧。身为艺术家；必须供奉这路神仙；他必须找到"以自我为中心"的感受——也许就是自私自利吧。如果我诚恳地对你说，"在气势上，你应该有所收敛，做一个更加成功的艺术家，事实上，你每个主题的缝隙中都塞满了金子"，相信你一定会原谅我的。不过，一旦想起那些约束，你一定会觉得被束上了镣铐——恐怕你从未将翅膀收敛起来超过半年时间。

《安狄米恩》的作者从前就像脑中被塞满了零乱的纸牌般，现在居然能够说出这番话来，这简直堪称奇迹了！如今，这些纸牌已被我拾起，理得整整齐齐了。

我的想象如同一座庙宇，我便是其中的修行者。我每天都在盼望着能够看到普罗米修斯。我推测，你这部作品应该尚未完成，也许刚刚写完第二幕。我记得你曾劝诫我，不要再发表我最初描写汉普斯特德荒原的那些毫无活力的诗。如今，我要把这一劝告回敬给你，供你参考。我寄给你的大部分诗作都是我两年前创作的，如果不是为了挣些钱，我绝不会拿去付印。所以，你应该看出来我已经遵从你的劝告了。在此，我必须再次对你的盛情表示最真挚的谢意，同时，请代我向雪莱夫人致以同样的谢意和敬意。

希望不久的将来能够与你相聚。

你最真诚的朋友约翰·济慈

1820年8月16日于汉普斯特德

John Keats to Shelley

Hampstead, August 16th,1820.

My dear Shelley,

I am very much gratified that you, in a foreign country, and with a mind almost **over-occupied**[1], should write to me in the strain of the letter beside me. If I do not take advantage of your invitation, it will be prevented by a circumstance I have very much at heart to **prophesy**[2]. There is no doubt that an English winter would put an end to me, and do so in a lingering hateful manner. Therefore, I must either voyage or journey to Italy, as a soldier **marches up to a battery**[3].

My nerves at present are the worst part of me, yet they feel soothed that, come what extreme may, I shall not be destined to remain in one spot long enough to take a hatred of any four particular **bedposts**[4]. I am glad you take any pleasure in my poor

poem, which I would willingly take the trouble to unwrite, if possible, did I care so much as I have done about reputation. I received a copy of the Cenci, as from yourself, from Hunt. There is only one part of it I am judge of — the poetry and **dramatic effect**[5], which by many spirits nowadays is considered the Mammon.

A modern work, it is said, must have a purpose, which may be the God. An artist must serve Mammon; he must have "**self-concentration**[6]" — selfishness, perhaps. You, I am sure, will forgive me for sincerely remarking that you might curb your **magnanimity**[7], and be more of an artist, and load every rift of your subject with ore. The thought of such discipline must fall like cold chains upon you, who perhaps never sat with your wings furled for six months together.

And is this not extraordinary talk for the writer of Endymion, whose mind was like a pack of scattered cards? I am picked up and sorted to a pip.

My imagination is a **monastery**[8], and I am its monk. You must explain my **metaphors**[9] to yourself. I am in expectation of Prometheus every day. Could I have my own wish effected, you would have it still in manuscript, or be but now putting an end to the second act. I remember you advising me not to publish my first-blights, on Hampstead Heath. I am returning advice upon your hands. Most of the poems in the volume I send you have been written above two years, and would never have been published but from a hope of gain; so you see I am inclined enough to take your advice now. I must express once more my deep sense of your kindness, adding my sincere thanks and respects for Mrs Shelley.

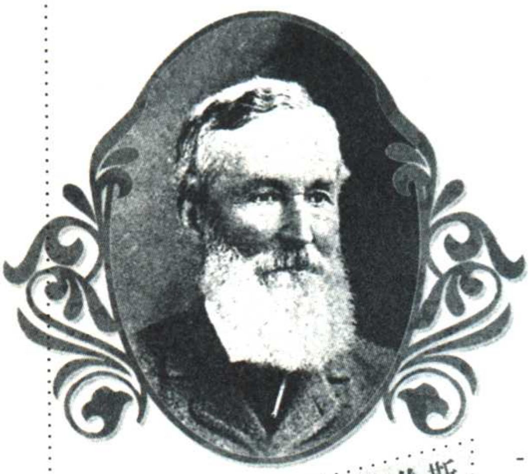
In the hope of soon seeing you, I remain.

most sincerely yours

John Keats.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. over-occupied ['əurə'ɔkjupəid] *adj.* 过用拥挤的，文中指“十分欣慰”。
2. prophesy ['prɔfisi] *v.* 预言，预报
3. marches up to a battery 是指“战士奔赴战场”。
4. bedpost ['bed,pəust] *n.* 床柱
5. dramatic effect 戏剧性效果
6. self-concentration 以自我为中心
7. magnanimity [,mægnə'nimit] *n* 宽宏大量
8. monastery ['mɔnəstri] *n.* 修道院，文中指“庙宇”。
9. metaphor ['metəfə] *n.* [修辞]隐喻，暗喻



托马斯·爱德华·劳伦斯致母亲的信

作者简介

托马斯·爱德华·劳伦斯

1888—1935

T. E. Lawrence

劳伦斯出生于威尔士，十八岁时考入牛津大学学习历史。一战时，劳伦斯报名参军，被派往阿拉伯国家工作。在战斗中，他英勇顽强且同情和支持阿拉伯人民的反侵略斗争，因而在阿拉伯世界享有很高的威望。战后，因为不满英国政府对阿拉伯国家的背叛，劳伦斯从此拒绝担任一切公职。

在生命的最后几年里，劳伦斯的文学天赋得到了充分展现。1926年他出版了《智慧的七柱石》一书，记录了他在中东地区的作战经历，被称为“描写阿拉伯起义的史诗性作品”。他还将《奥德赛》重新翻译出版，受到文学界的广泛赞誉。但劳伦斯这时已经心力交瘁，战争给他身体造成的创伤开始显露出来。1935年5月13日，他因车祸而死。

这是劳伦斯和父亲在外旅行采风时写给母亲的信。

1

亲爱的妈妈：

我和父亲从依普斯威奇郡出发，走过了一条十八英里长的山路，翻过了六座山，最终到达此处。整个行程共用去两个小时。父亲并不喜欢这样的行程。不过我们的食物准备得很充足，父亲自从离开林恩后就再也没有咳嗽，看样子比从前好多了。

因为起风，我们不得不放弃标尔斯那条路，转而从另一条路走。不过，我依然希望明天能够到达佩伯玛西。好在我昨天又得到了一片摹拓，因此还不至特别失望。我已将所有的摹拓寄给了鲍威尔小姐，希望她会喜欢。我想，威尔此刻正与您在一起，是吗？请您转告他不要让您过于辛劳，要注意保持身体健康。现在，我不能在阿恩起床，或上床睡觉的时候去呵他的痒了。请您帮我转告他，这边有许多不同种类的蝴蝶，诸如“红司令”，以及其他一些奇特品种。同时，希望您能告诉比德尔，让他到这里来，因为他还从未见过“死亡头”一类的昆虫呢！他一定会特别喜欢诺威奇博物馆，这儿收藏了许多

猛禽类的标本，在现存的四百七十个品种中，收藏品共四百零九种。如果他知道我没有去看那些鸟类标本，而去看了诺曼人的鹫瓮，一定会惊恐得大声尖叫。在大厅里有一组令人生畏的蟒蛇勒死老虎的标本。我想在星期三返回牛津。希望您能感受到我无尽的爱，并请您代我向三个小家伙转达我的爱。我们的医生喜欢杰瑞吗？请不要忘记，下个星期天是坷农的生日。我们已经收到了威尔的一张明信片、您的明信片和一封信。代我向大家问好！

爱您的内德

1905年 8月13日于科尔切斯特福利斯旅馆

2

亲爱的妈妈：

爸爸出门了，我终于有机会给您写信了。我早就想给您写信的，但最近一直忙于在加里阿德城堡拍照，另外还有其他一些事情难以脱身。博韦是一个迷人的地方。我依依不舍地从那里离开前往计索（一个大城堡），结果却令我大失所望——那里所有的城堡都被锁上了。于是，我又从计索来到了小安德利斯。加里阿德城堡真可谓雄伟壮观，但那里的明信片却使人感到乏味。我在那儿又多待了一天，除了不停地拍照，没有做其他的事情。从早晨六点到下午七点，我一共用掉了十卷胶卷。如果一切顺利的话，我就可以得到一套不错的照片了，那么，我一定会为此而写一本书。有些照片很难拍到，所以一整天都很辛苦。我认为小安德利斯是个不错的落脚地，旅店价格便宜，住着又很舒适。塞纳河就从旅店后门不远处流过，河中心处有一个树木葱郁的小岛，周围是一个天然大浴场。这里山丘众多，景色别致，这一切都可尽收眼底。塞纳河河边的风光着实迷人，时不时地可以看到拖船拖着一长串驳船从旅店门前驶过。这一切都掩映在小山上城堡废墟的阴影里。我向您描述了这么多，您的心中一定已经有一个清晰的轮廓了。可以说，这里的城堡设计巧妙，规划奇特，与周围环境相得益彰，整个建筑构造真可谓是巧夺天工，堪称杰作。理查德一世一定要比我们所想象的要伟大，他一定是位伟大的战略家、工程师；同时，也一定是一位伟大的战士。

1907年8月11日 星期日

于艾葡勒

T. E. Lawrence to His Mother

1

Fleece Hotel Colchester, August 13, 1905.

Dear Mother,

We came here from Ipswich over a rather **hilly**[1] road 18 miles long. Still we took two hours over it; and walked about six hills; a proceeding Father does not like. We are feeding **splendidly**[2]. Father is much better and has not coughed since Lynn.

I have had to give up Bures. We came by the other road because of the wind; still I hope to get Pebmarsh tomorrow, and I got one yesterday so I'm not altogether **mournful**[3]. I have sent off all my **rubbings**[4] to Miss Powell;hope she'll like them. I expect you have. Will with you now. Will you please tell him not to let you do more work than is necessary to keep you in condition? Also tickle Arnie when he gets up and when he goes to bed all from me. Tell him there are dozens of butterflie so fall sorts about here, some Red Admirals; and a lot of other very queer ones. Ask Beadle to comeup here as he has never seen a Death's Head or some such **insect**[5]. Norwich Museum he would have enjoyed. There was the largest collection of **raptorial**[6] birds in existence 409 out of 470 species: I wonder if he'll shriek with **horror**[7] when he hears that I did not look at them but went off and examined the Norman W. C. S. In the hall was **athrilling**[8] stuffed group a boa **constrictor**[9] **strangling**[10] a tiger. We hope to return to Oxford Wednesday. Kindly take heaps of love from me for yourself;and when you've had enough, divide the **remainder**[11] into three portions, and give them to the three worms you have with you. I wonder how the Doctor is enjoying Jerry. Don't forget the Canon's birthday next Sunday. We have had onepost card from Will, one from yourself and one letter from you. Loud **snores**[12] to all. Love to yourself.

Ned.

2

Evreux, Sunday 11 August 1907.

Dear Mother,

Father is out, and so I am at last writing to you. I would have written before, but was so busy taking photos, etc. at Chateau Gaillard. Beauvais was a wonderful place,

and I left it with great regret for Gisors which was disappointing, (a large castle, but all the towers locked up), from Gisors we came to Petit Andelys. The Chateau Gaillard was so magnificent, and the post cards so **abominable**[13], that I stopped there an extra day. And did nothing but photograph, from 6a.m. to 7p.m.I took ten altogether. and if all are successful, I will have a wonderful series. I will certainly have to start a book. Some of them were very difficult to take, and the whole day was very hard. I think Pt. Andelys would be a good place to stop at. The hotel is cheap, and very pleasant. The Seine runs near the back door. and the bathing is excellent, from a little wooded island in the centre of the river. There are plenty of hills with insight, and many interesting places. Also the scenery all along the river is exceedingly fine. Long strings of barges pulled by a steam-tug pass the hote loccasionally, and the whole place is over shadowed by the hills with the ruins of the Chateau. I have talked so much about this to you that you must know it all by heart, so I had better content myself with saying that its plan is **marvellous**[14], the execution wonderful, and the situation perfect. The whole construction bears the **unmistakable**[15] stamp of genius. Richard I must have been a fargreater man than we usually consider him;he must have been a great strategist and a great engineer, as well as a great man-at-arms.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. hilly ['hili] *adj.* 多小山的，文中“hylly road”指山路。
2. splendid ['splendid] *adj.* 壮丽的，辉煌的，极好的
3. mournful ['mɔːnful] *adj.* 悲哀的
4. rubbing ['rʌbiŋ] *n.* 摹拓，摹拓品
5. insect ['insekt] *n.* 昆虫，卑鄙的人
6. raptorial [ræp'tɔːriəl] *adj.* 捕食生物的
7. horror ['hɔrə] *n.* 惊骇，恐怖
8. athrill [ə'θril] *adj.* 激动的，兴奋的
9. constrictor [kən'striktə] *n.* 大蟒
10. strangle ['stræŋgl] *v.* 扼死
11. remainder [ri'meində] *n.* 提醒的人，暗示
12. snore [snɔː] *v.* 打鼾
13. abominable [ə'bɔminəbl] *adj.* 讨厌的，令人憎恶的
14. marvellous ['mɑːviləs] *adj.* 绝妙的，了不起的
15. unmistakable ['ʌnmis'teikəbl] *adj.* 明白的，不会弄错的



1788—1824

乔治·戈登·拜伦 George Gordon Byron

英国著名诗人。他出生于伦敦破落的贵族家庭，十岁就继承了男爵爵位。曾在剑桥大学读书，深受启蒙主义的熏陶。拜伦从学生时代开始写诗，成名作为《恰尔德·哈罗尔德游记》(第1、2章)。后因私生活受到上流社会的排斥，拜伦愤而移居意大利。在意大利，他完成了《恰尔德·哈罗尔德游记》的第3、4章。这部抒情叙事长诗和未完成的巨著《唐璜》是他最著名的作品。1823年初，希腊抗击土耳其的斗争高涨，拜伦放下正在写作的《唐璜》，毅然前往希腊，参加那里的武装斗争，不幸于1824年4月19日死于希腊军中。

本文是拜伦写给妻子的信，那时他们的婚姻已经名存实亡。

拜伦致夫人的信

1

……

在整桩不愉快的事情当中，我已尽自己最大的努力来回避痛苦；然而，却没能成功，因为痛苦始终伴随在你我身旁。可是，如果你曾经回首往事，想想为了使你的家庭得到便利，那个名誉、情感，乃至一切都成为牺牲品的男人吧！他曾是你心爱的男人，而且他——无论你觉得他有多么可恶——也曾爱过你。如果你认为我会对你实施报复，以泄心头之恨，那么你便错了——我还不至于那么卑鄙。也许我曾因你而感到愤怒，至今仍如此——这有什么可奇怪的吗？可是，处在愤怒之中的我，从未以恶言相讥，因为我知道，我们的女儿必将受我们的争吵所累，并为我们承担痛苦。如果你企图用各种苛刻办法来对付我，以获得内心的平衡，那么你又错了：即使从一般人所能容忍的底线来看，你也无法得到幸福，甚至得不到平静，恐怕以后也无法改变。我对自己今后的命运十分自信，这种思想会使我坚持到底，命运自然会为我们安排好一切。我对所发生的事情早有预料，倘若我把你和那些与你观点一致的人当作我陷入逆境的帮凶来看待，我也无法指责你们，因为一切迹象并未显示你们是蓄意害我的，因为整件事情并不像是一个预谋。不管怎样，时间和复仇女神

自会主持公道，即便最近的条件有利于我做些报复的事，但我不会那样做的。也许你会对我的预言一笑了之——那就笑吧，不过请你想一想：这一预言是被人类的历史经验所证明了的，每个引起他人巨大痛苦的人——哪怕是在无意间引起的，终将偿还他人：我一直在偿还——你也会的。

1817年3月5日于威尼斯

2

（烦劳尊敬的莱恩夫人代转此信。）

非常感谢！我已收到了“艾达的头发”，这头发柔软而美丽，如同奥古斯塔收藏的我十二岁时的头发一样乌黑。不过，艾达的头发并没有卷曲，也许这是她一直让它们随意生长的缘故吧！

我同样要感谢你所注明的日期和姓名，因为我确信，这些字迹是你留给我的唯一手笔，因为你的来信我都已原璧奉还；不过，还有两个字，确切地说，是在一个老账本上写过两遍的一个词——“家庭”，除此之外，我再无你的任何东西了。你的最后一封来信已被我烧掉了，原因有两个：其一，你的态度不够礼貌；其二，我希望能和你保持联系，但却不希望留下任何证明，因为它们会给那些多疑者提供搞阴谋诡计的素材。

我想，此时我正写的这封信将会在艾达的生日那天——我想应该是十二月十日前后，被送到你的手中。到那时，她就六岁了。如此看来，再过十二年我就可以与她相见了——如果我迫不得已必须到英国处理一些商务，或其他事情的话，也许能更早一些见到她。不过，无论我们相隔万里还是近在咫尺，请记住这一点：我们长时间的分离应该使彼此变得心平气和，只要我们的孩子在——我想，你我都希望她能够比父母活得长久，我们总会有好日子。

分别后的岁月已远比我们相识、相恋，乃至婚后的时光加在一起还要长。我们两人犯了一个大错误，不过这一切都已结束，更无法挽回。因为，我已经三十岁了，你也不比我年轻几岁，虽然我们并未在这漫漫人生走得太远，但在我们这个年龄段的人，习惯与思想都已成形，无法适应突如其来的变化。既然我们年轻时无法情投意合，如今便更难相处融洽了。

我之所以要讲这一番话，就是想坦诚地告诉你，尽管我们在生活中发生了种种变故，我认为分别一年后，和好如初并非是不可实现的事情，但后来，

我只能放弃这种想法。我们很少有共同语言，不过，我们之间既然无法团聚，至少还可以在难得的交往中保持一份谦恭，对彼此保持一份友好的态度，我想，这一点也许连萍水相逢的人也能做得到。就我个人而言，虽然脾气暴躁，但并没有恶意；除了无端的挑衅，我不会被激怒。而对于你，一个比我更为冷漠而倔强的人，我只想提醒你一句：有时，你或许已把深埋在心中的愤怒错当成一种尊严，把一些不良的思绪当成了责任……

无论整件事情是因你而起，还是因我而起，或是我们双方都有责任，我都不想再去探究了。我现在只想考虑两件事——你是我孩子的母亲，我们永远无法再见面。我想，如果你能够设身处地地为我想一想这两点，也许对我们三个人都有好处。

拜伦

1821年11月17日于比萨

相关链接

拜伦在1813年向安娜·密尔班克小姐求婚，并于1815年1月和她结婚。这是拜伦一生中所犯的最大错误。拜伦夫人是一个见解褊狭、深为其阶级的伪善所宥的人，完全不能理解拜伦的事业和观点，结婚一年后便带着刚出生的女儿回到自己家中，从而使流言纷起。英国统治阶级以此为契机，对它的叛逆者拜伦进行了疯狂的报复。1816年4月，拜伦离开了英国，终其一生再没有回去过。

George Gordon Byron to Lady Byron

1

Venice, March 5th 1817.

…

Throughout the whole of this **unhappy business**[1], I have done my best to avoid the **bitterness**[2], which, however, is yet among us; and it would be as well if even you at times recollected, that the man who has been sacrificed in fame, in feelings, in every thing, to the convenience of your family, was he whom you once loved, and who — whatever you may imagine to the contrary — loved you. If you conceive that I could be actuated by revenge against you, you are mistaken: I am not humble enough to be

vindictive. Irritated I may have been, and may be — is it a wonder? But upon such irritation, beyond its **momentary**[3] expression, I have not acted, from the hour that you quitted me to that in which I am made aware that our daughter is to be made the **entail**[4] of our discussion, the inheritor of our bitterness. If you think to reconcile yourself to yourself by **accumulating**[5] harsh ness against me, you are again mistaken: you are not happy, nor even tranquil, nor will you ever be so, even to the moderate degree which is permitted to general humanity. For myself I have a confidence in my Fortune, which will yet bear me through. (Here there is a Greek phrase meaning "Fortune is juster than we.") The reverses which have occurred, were what I should have expected; and, in considering you and yours merely as the instruments of my more recent **adversity**[6], it would be difficult for me to blame you, did not every thing appear to intimate a deliberate intention of as wilful malice on your part as could be well digested into a system. However, time and Nemesis will do that, which I could not, even were it in my power remote or immediate. You will smile at this piece of prophecy — do so, but recollect it: it is justified by all human experience. No one was ever even the involuntary cause of great evils to others, without a requital: I have paid and am paying for mine — so will you.

2

Pisa, November 17, 1821.

(To the care of the Hon. Mrs Leigh, London.)

I have to acknowledge the receipt of "Ada's hair", which is very soft and pretty, and nearly as dark already as mine was at twelve years old, if I may judge from what I recollect of some in Augusta's possession, taken at that age. But it don't curl, perhaps from its being let grow.

I also thank you for the **inscription**[7] of the date and name, and I will tell you why; — I believe that they are the only two or three words of your hand-writing in my possession. For your letters I returned; and except the two words, or rather the one word, "Household", written twice in an old account book, I have no other. I burnt your last note, for two reasons: — firstly, it was written in a style not very agreeable; and, secondly, I wished to take your word without documents, which are the worldly resources of **suspicious people**[8].

I suppose that this note will reach you somewhere about Ada's birthday — the 10th of December, I believe. She will then be six, so that in about twelve more I shall have some chance of meeting her; — perhaps sooner, if I am obliged to go to England by business or otherwise. Recollect, however, one thing, either in distance or nearness; — every day which keeps us asunder should, after so long a period, rather soften our

mutual feelings, which must always have one rallying-point as long as our child exists, which I presume we both hope will be long after either of her parents.

The time which has elapsed since the separation has been considerably more than the whole brief period of our union, and the not much longer one of our prior acquaintance. We both made a bitter mistake; but now it is over, and irrevocably so. For, at thirty-three on my part, and a few years less on yours, though it is no very extended period of life, still it is one when the habits and thought are generally so formed as to admit of no modification; and as we could not agree when younger, we should with difficulty do so now.

I say all this, because I own to you, that, notwithstanding every thing, I considered our re-union as not impossible for more than a year after the separation; — but then I gave up the hope entirely and for ever. But this very impossibility of re-union seems to me at least a reason why, on all the few points of discussion which can arise between us, we should preserve the courtesies of life, and as much of its kindness as people who are never to meet may preserve perhaps more easily than nearer connections. For my own part, I am violent, but not malignant; for only fresh provocations can awaken my resentments. To you, who are colder and more concentrated, I would just hint, that you may sometimes mistake the depth of a cold anger for dignity, and a worse feeling for duty.

Whether the offence has been solely on my side, or reciprocal, or on yours chiefly, I have ceased to reflect upon any but two things, — viz, that you are the mother of my child, and that we shall never meet again. I think if you also consider the two corresponding points with reference to myself, it will be better for all three.

Yours ever,
Noel Byron.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. unhappy business 在文中指“整桩不愉快的事情”。
2. bitterness ['bitənis] *n.* 苦难，痛苦
3. momentary ['məuməntəri] *adj.* 瞬间的，刹那间的
4. entail [in'teil] *vt.* 使必需
5. accumulate [ə'kjuːmjuleit] *v.* 积聚，堆积
6. adversity [əd'vəːsiti] *n.* 不幸，灾祸，逆境
7. inscription [in'skripʃən] *n.* 题字，碑铭
8. suspicious people 指“多疑者”。



拜伦同妻子离婚后，于1819年在意大利结识了桂乔丽伯爵夫人，两人有过一段缠绵的交往。后来，桂乔丽伯爵夫人成为了拜伦的情妇。

拜伦致桂乔丽伯爵夫人的信

◎ [英]乔治·戈登·拜伦 George Gordon Byron

我最亲爱的特丽莎：

我已经在你的花园里看完了这本书；我的爱人，你不在这里，否则我是不可能把它看完的。这是你最喜欢的一本书，作者是我的朋友。你是看不懂这封信的，这也正是我没有用意大利文写的原因，但你会认得那热烈地爱着你的人的笔迹，而且你一定会想到，他在读一本你所喜爱的书时，心中想到的只有爱情。

Amor mio（意大利语：我的爱人），在所有的语言中，这个词都很美，尤其是在你的语言中，它包含了我此时此刻及今生今世的全部意义。无论是我现在还是未来的生存意义，都取决于你的一念之间。我的命运维系在你的身上，你是个十八岁的女人，离开修道院才两年。我真希望你仍然在修道院里，或者，至少我能在你未嫁之时与你相遇。

然而一切都已经太迟了。我爱你，你也爱我，至少你是这样说的，而且你的行动也证明了这一点，无论如何，这总算是对我的一大安慰。可是，我实在太爱你了，简直无法停止。即使阿尔卑斯山和大海将我们分隔，你也一定要时常想念我；但它们不会这样做的，除非是你希望如此。

拜伦

1819年8月25日于博洛尼亚

George Gordon Byron to Countess Teresa Guiccioli

Bologna, August 25, 1819.

My dearest Teresa,

I have read this book in your garden; my love, you were **absent**[1], or else I could not have read it. It is a favorite book of yours, and the writer was a friend of mine. You will not understand them, which is the reason I have not **scrawled**[2] them in Italian. But you will recognize the handwriting of him who **passionately**[3] loved you, and you will divine that, over a book which was yours, he could only think of love.

In that word, beautiful in all languages, but most so in yours — Amor mio — is comprised my existence here and hereafter. I feel I exist here, and I feel that I shall exist hereafter, to what purpose you will decide; my destiny tests with you, and you are a woman, eighteen years of age, and two out of a **convent**[4], I wish that you had staid there, with all my heart, or, at least, that I had never met you in your married state.

But all this is too late. I love you, and you love me, at least, you say so, and act as if you did so, which last is a great **consolation**[5] in all events. But I more than love you, and cannot cease to love you. Think of me, sometimes, when the Alps and ocean divide us, but they never will, unless you wish it.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. absent ['æbsənt] *adj.* 不在的，缺席的，文中“you were absent”指“你不在这里”即“你不在身边”的意思。
2. scrawl [skrɔːl] *vt.* 乱涂，潦草地写，文中为“写”的意思。
3. passionate ['pæʃənit] *adj.* 充满热情的
4. convent ['kɔnvənt] *n.* 女修道院
5. consolation [ˌkɔnsə'leiʃən] *n.* (被)安慰，起安慰作用的人或事物





1812—1870

查尔斯·狄更斯 Charles Dickens

英国十九世纪现实主义文学的主要代表，并享有"用英语写作的最伟大小说家"的美誉。他的作品广泛而深刻地描写了英国由半封建社会向工业资本主义社会过渡时期的社会生活的各个形象。代表作有《艰难时代》、《双城记》等。

凯瑟琳是狄更斯的妻子，但狄更斯却深爱着凯瑟琳的妹妹玛丽。后来玛丽因心脏病突发去世，狄更斯与妻子的关系便逐渐冷淡，最终于1858年分居。

查尔斯·狄更斯致凯瑟琳的信

我亲爱的凯瑟琳：

现在，请你注意了，你必须仔细地看这封信，而且速度要慢下来。如果你只是匆匆忙忙地读到这里，完全没有搞清楚——还没有领会信中所说的坏消息，恐怕你就不得不重新看一遍了。

小多拉突然病倒了，却仿佛一丝痛苦都没有，因为她的表情显得非常平静——如果你看到她的样子，一定会以为她在平静地睡觉呢。可是，我知道她病得有多重，甚至都不敢对她的康复抱有太大的希望。我不敢相信——我还有什么不能和你说的呢，亲爱的？事实上，她已经完全没有康复的可能了。

我不愿离开家，留在这里也帮不上什么忙，但我还是应该留在这儿。我知道，你也不愿意离家在外，你不在家，我总难以安心。福斯特依然十分关心我们，现在，我把这封信寄给你，希望你见到这封信之后能够尽快赶回来。不过，在我结束这封信之前不得不要求你——回来时一定要保持镇静。

要记得我平时对你讲过的话：我们膝下儿女众多，别的父母曾遭遇的一切，我们也无法躲过；而且，我们也不能指望一切都能躲过。倘若——倘若在你回来的时候，我不得不忍痛对你说"我们的小宝宝已不在人世了"，你依然要对其他孩子尽到做母亲的责任，证明你无愧于他们对你的信赖。

如果你能够认真地读完这封信，你就会正确对待这件事的。

永远爱你的查尔斯·狄更斯

1851年4月15日 星期四

德文郡街

Charles Dickens to Catherine

Devonshire-terrace, Tuesday morning, 15th April, 1851.

My dearest Kate,

Now observe, you must read this letter very slowly and carefully. If you have hurried on thus far without quite understanding (apprehending some bad news) I rely on your turning back and reading again.

Little Dora, without being in the least pain, is suddenly stricken ill There is nothing in her appearance but perfect rest you would suppose her quietly asleep, but I am sure she is very ill, and I cannot encourage myself with much hope of her recovery. I do not (and why should I say I do to you, my dear?) I do not think her recovery at all likely.



图为查尔斯·狄更斯的妻子凯瑟琳，一个爱情中的悲剧性人物。狄更斯与她结婚后才发现，他深爱的人并不是凯瑟琳，而是她的妹妹玛丽。

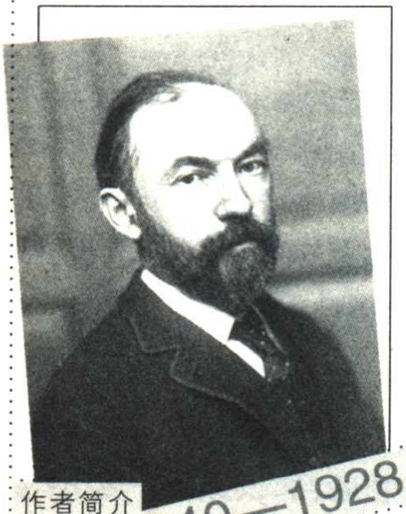
I do not like to leave home, I can do no good here, but I think it right to stay. You will not like to be away, I know, and I cannot reconcile it to myself to keep you away. Forster, with his usual affection for us, comes down to bring you this letter and to bring you home, but I cannot close it without putting the strongest entreaty and injunction upon you to come with perfect composure.

To remember what I have often told you, that we never can expect to be exempt, as to our many children, from the afflictions of other parents, and that if if when you come I should even have to say to you, "Our little baby is dead," you are to do your duty to the rest, and to show yourself, worthy of the great trust you hold in them.

If you will only read this steadily I have a perfect confidence in your doing what is right.

Ever affectionately

Charles Dickens.



作者简介

1840—1928

托马斯·哈代

Thomas Hardy

英国诗人、小说家。作为横跨两个世纪的作家，哈代早期和中期的创作以小说为主，继承和发扬了维多利亚时代的文学传统，晚年则以其出色的诗歌为二十世纪的英国文学开拓了道路。哈代一生共发表了十五部长篇小说、四部短篇小说集、八卷诗集和两部诗剧，他的作品反映了资本主义侵入英国农村城镇后所引起的社会经济、政治、道德、风俗等方面的深刻变化及人民（尤其是妇女）的悲惨命运，揭露了资产阶级道德、法律和宗教的虚伪性。主要作品有小说《德伯家的苔丝》、《无名的裘德》、长篇史诗《列王》等。

伊凡菊林·史密斯是一个英国文学爱好者，她将自己的作品寄给哈代，请求指正；哈代也热情地回信予以点评。

托马斯·哈代致伊凡菊林·史密斯的信

亲爱的史密斯小姐：

我已经拜读过您笔下的那则小故事，通过它，足以看出作者独具的匠心，原本试图找些瑕疵的我也不免动摇了自己的立场。即便如此，我也要把自己的想法毫无保留地说出来。按照您的意思，我会实事求是地予以评价。

在资深评论家的眼中，这则小故事定会成为颇有前景的佳作——故事构思精巧，结构严谨。不过，文字本身反映出您在字句的锤炼上略有瑕疵。这也许正是您所说的那位编辑将您的作品拒之门外的原因。这一问题在作品的前几个章节尤为突出。我斗胆在您的手稿上用铅笔作了一些标记，将我感到有些疑惑的地方为您指了出来，希望您能够重新考虑一下这些令人匪夷所思的地方。第一卷的最后两页与文章主题相悖，希望您能予以删减。P小姐与女儿们之间的关系掩饰得还不够，甚至连爱丽丝后来的忏悔也不能抹去这种印象。而从另一个角度来看，我要向您表示祝贺，仲夏夜在教堂门廊里发生的那一幕处理得好极了！简直无可挑剔，堪称全书之中的精华；还有，您引进故事主题的方式也值得称道，就在人们几乎忘记了全书主题的时候，拖货车的马被教堂里的人拒之

门外,而爱丽丝则紧随其后,这一幕令人意想不到地闯入脑海,与当时明媚的阳光和原本欢乐的氛围形成了鲜明的对比。

在我说出以下的话时,希望您不要认为我太苛刻了——我要说的是,如果我是您的话,一定会将故事从头至尾改写一遍,将全文的篇幅压缩至原稿的一半或三分之二。当然,我并非逼迫您非这样做不可,不过对我而言,如果这则故事出自我手,我一定会这样处理的。即便您根本从未想过将其出版,单纯将其视为文学练笔,也未尝不可。如果您的首部书稿能够以一种清新脱俗的笔法创作,那么也是不错的,尽管在您成名之后这就变得无足轻重了。

下面请允许我谈一谈第二部书稿。这篇故事应该说是一篇速写,是那种轻喜剧的样本,如果说它也难逃被编辑拒之门外的厄运,那么原因一定出在整体布局上——叙述过于松散。语言表达有些做作,不过,如果您能对文章做一下删减就很容易解决这一问题了。在我没有了解到作者的年龄时,我无法对其文学功底和能力做出准确的判断。因此,如果作者在二十五岁以下,且作品为独立创作完成,那么他绝对值得表扬。书中人物个性的确不乏幽默感,整部作品也很精彩。作为初次尝试,无论是这部作品,还是那部仲夏夜前夕的故事都超出了一般水平。

请相信,我永远是

您最真诚的托马斯·哈代

1876年12月5日于斯特敏特牛顿村

Thomas Hardy to Evangeline Smith

Stuminster Newton Dec 5.1876.

Dear Miss Smith,

I have read your charming little story with such a keen interest in its writer that my attempted position of frigid critic has been difficult to maintain. However, I will do my best to dismiss all thoughs of where it came from, and to estimate the work on its own merits, as you desire.

The story then, is one which would be called promising by experienced critics. The plot is well conceived, and well developed; but the writing itself shows want of practice in that department, which was probably the reason of its rejection by the editor you mentioned. The early pages show this particularly. I have ventured to make pen-

cillings here and there on the MS. To draw your attention to doubtful portions, that you may reconsider them. The last two pages of Book No 1 consist of a digression which I should advise you to strike out: and the ill-feeling between Miss P. and the Lygon girls is scarcely veiled enough. Even Alice's repentace afterwards fails to remove this impression. On the other hand I have to congratulate you on your execution of the scene in the Church-porch on Midsummer night, which is really strongly written, and the best bit in the tale. Also, too, on the way in which you have managed to introduce the leading idea of the story, when it is nearly forgotten, by showing the refusal of the carthorses to pass the churchyard with Alice behind them. The weird reason of this comes into the mind in excellent contrast to the general happiness and sunlight of the hour.

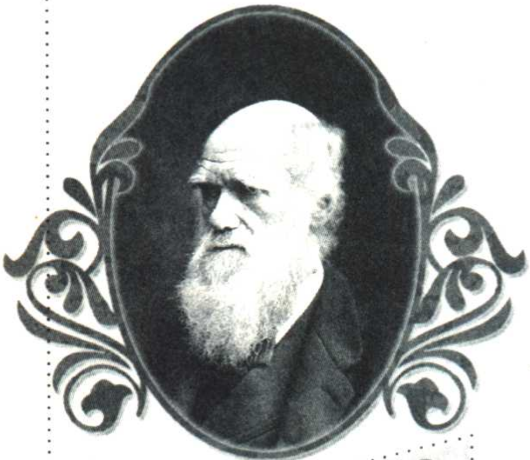
Now you must not think it harsh of me to say what I am going to say that if I were you I should rewrite the story from beginning to end, and condense it to about one half, or two thirds, its present length. I do not absolutely advise you to do this, but were the story to turn up among my old manuscripts that is the treatment which would occur to me as best. As a literary exercise alone it is worth doing, even if you never attempt to print the story. It would also be a good thing it you were to write in a clear round hand in a first MS, though after you become known this does not matter so much.

With regard to the second MS. The story, or rather sketch, is a very fair specimen of light, farcial comedy. Should it be refused by an editor the reason will probably be the extreme slightness of the whole thing. There is some affectation in the expressions, which might be easily cured by excision. I cannot well express an opinion on the literary power or possibilities of the writer without knowing his or her age. There is a certain fluency in the wording which seems to show that the person is not altogether inexperienced in expressing him of herself: so that if it is the unassisted work of a writer under 25 he is to be praised. There is real humour in the characters. And the sketch altogether is amusing. As first attempts both this and the Midsummer eve story are far above the average.



Believe me to remain

Sincerely Yours
Thomas Hardy.



达尔文致父亲的信

作者简介

1809—1882

查尔斯·达尔文

Charles Darwin

英国博物学家，进化论的奠基人。达尔文出生于英国的一个医生家庭，曾在爱丁堡大学学医，后进入剑桥大学学习神学。1831年从剑桥大学毕业后，达尔文开始了为时五年的环球旅行，观察、搜集了大量动植物和地质等方面的资料，经过归纳整理和综合分析后，形成了生物进化的观点，并于1859年出版了《物种起源》一书，全面提出以自然选择为基础的进化学说，震动了当时的学术界，成为生物学史上的一个转折点。

达尔文八岁丧母，一切教导都依靠父亲，所以与父亲关系非常好。达尔文极其尊敬父亲，他对于世界上的任何事情都要下公允的判断，唯独对父亲的主张深信不疑。在《回忆录》里，达尔文称赞他的父亲有观察力、同情心和判断力，而且性情谨慎，善于经营；对儿女们最大的赐予是道德上的表率作用。

亲爱的父亲：

我想伊拉兹马斯(伊拉兹马斯·达尔文)已经将旅行中所发生的事都讲给您听了吧？既然如此，我就不做更多的描述了，我只想说，这次出行使我花费了七英磅。我们昨晚在一个学院附近找到了一家非常舒适的住处。旅店老板娘麦凯夫人是一个非常爱干净的老妇人——她彬彬有礼、服务周到。她住在爱丁堡洛锡安大街11号。她允许查尔斯·达尔文以爱丁堡大学学生的身份居住在那里——这个消息是W.K.狄克森先生通知我们的，拉尔夫·理查森先生则将详细情况告诉了我们，对此，我们十分感激。我们居住的地方只需从大厅走四级台阶就到了——这比周围几家旅店方便多了。两间配有电灯的卧室加一个客厅只需要一英磅六先令；顺便说一下，在爱丁堡，这种配有电灯的卧室很难预订得到——大多数房间甚至连个通风孔都没有，更不要说安装电灯了。出行的第一天清晨，我们拜访了汉利博士——最初，我们根本没抱找到他的希望，不过我们遇到了一位善良的牧师，他十分热情地把我们带到他的藏书室，并在一张地图上为我们指出了汉利博士的住处所在地——事实上，几乎所有的苏格

兰人都很热情，这一点足以使我们英国人感到脸红了。我们终于找到了汉利博士，我们之间不但进行了一次非常愉快的交谈；而且，博士还带领我们观光了整个城镇——这真是个令人心驰神往的地方。我们在桥街上看到的景象堪称一奇——我们并未在这里找到河流，反而看到了川流不息的人群。整整一上午的时间，我们都用来欣赏城镇风光了，这使我对这个地方有了初步的了解。晚上，大家一起去欣赏斯蒂芬小姐的歌剧，她的演出精彩极了！斯蒂芬小姐是舞台上最有名的演员，每次唱完一曲后，观众都要求她再唱一首，强烈的呼声几乎使她无法继续唱下去了。

回旅馆前，我们一直待在圣·普林斯星级宾馆，让我没想到的是，我竟在那儿遇到了我的老同学，还是一个与我相当合得来的老同学；他刚从瑞士旅行回来，现在打算回来继续学习。基础教程将于明天开始授课，我们交了十先令，星期六就可以去听课了——我们的名字被记在一个登记本上，典礼已结束了；但直到我们从一位教授那儿拿到了一张票，我们才得以进图书馆；我们还去了教堂，并在那里听了二十分钟的布道；我期待着沃尔特·斯科特先生能为我们带来一场两个半小时的激情演说。

爱您的儿子查尔斯·达尔文

1825年10月 星期日晨于爱丁堡

相关链接

《物种起源》于1859年11月24日在伦敦出版。它的出现引起了一阵愤怒的飓风，但是科学家们很快就认识到达尔文是正确的。在达尔文逝世之前，那些一度看来非常危险的思想已成为19世纪人类共识的一部分。从这个意义上来讲，《物种起源》并非仅仅是一本关于生物学的书，而是一个革命的宣言。作者达尔文也被誉称为"辛勤刻苦的、追求至善至美的世界上最伟大的革命者之一"。

Charles Darwin to R.W. Darwin

Sunday Morning(Edinburgh, October, 1825.)

My dear Father,

As I suppose Erasmus (Erasmus Darwin) has given all the **particulars**[1] of the journey, I will say no more about it, except that altogether it has cost me 7 pounds.

We got into our **lodgings**[2] yesterday evening, which are very comfortable and near the college. Our **Landlady**[3], by name Mrs. Mackay, is a nice clean old body — exceedingly civil and attentive. She lives in "11, Lothian Street, Edinburgh", who setting forth that Charles Darwin resided there as an Edinburgh University student. We are indebted to Mr. W.K. Dickson for obtaining for us this information, and to Mr. Ralph Richardson for kindly supplying us with particulars. and only four flights of steps from the ground-floor, which is very moderate to some other lodgings that we were nearly taking. The terms are 1 pound 6 shillings for two very nice and light bedrooms and a sitting-room; by the way, light bedrooms are very scarce articles in Edinburgh, since most of them are little holes in which there is neither air nor light. We called on Dr. Hanley the first morning, whom I think we never should have found, had it not been for a good-natured Dr. of Divinity who took us into his library and showed us a map, and gave us directions how to find him. Indeed, all the Scotchmen are so civil and attentive, that it is enough to make an Englishman ashamed of himself. When at last we found the Doctor, and having made all the proper speeches on both sides, we all three set out and walked all about the town, which we admire excessively; indeed Bridge Street is the most extraordinary thing I ever saw, and when we first looked over the sides, we could hardly believe our eyes, when instead of a fine river, we saw a stream of people. We spend all our mornings in promenading about the town, which we know pretty well, and in the evenings we go to the play to hear Miss Stephens (Probably Catherine Stephens), which is quite delightful; she is very popular here, being encored to such a degree, that she can hardly get on with the play.

Before we got into our lodgings, we were staying at the Star Hotel in Princes St., where to my surprise I met with an old schoolfellow, whom I like very much; he is just come back from a walking tour in Switzerland and is now going to study for his (degree?) The introductory lectures begin next Wednesday, and we were matriculated for them on Saturday; we pay 10s., and write our names in a book, and the ceremony is finished; but the Library is not free to us till we get a ticket from a Professor. We just have been to Church and heard a sermon of only 20 minutes. I expected, from Sir Walter Scott's account, a soul-cutting discourse of 2 hours and a half.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. particular [pə'tikjulə] *n.* 细节
2. lodging ['lɔdʒiŋ] *n.* 寄宿处，寄宿
3. landlady ['lændleidi] *n.* 女房东(旅馆等)的老板娘

I remain your affectionate son

C. Darwin.



1694—1773

P.D.斯坦诺普·切斯特菲尔德
Philip Dormer Stanhope Chesterfield

英国作家、政治家、外交家，最有名的著作就是文集《致儿家书》。从1737起，他几乎每日一信，对儿子进行教育。他在信中对儿子讲述了上流社会生活的一些规则，教他怎样讲究礼貌，怎样取悦于人，怎样在社会上取得成就，是十八世纪英国贵族与资产阶级的必读之书。

切斯特菲尔德伯爵致儿子的信

亲爱的儿子：

无论你在做什么，都会牵动着我的心；无论何时我都在想着你。此刻，我被两封信深深地触动了——就是我在洛桑时读到的那两封与你相关的信——一封来自圣·杰曼夫人，另一封来自帕皮尼先生。两封信对你均有较高的评价，即便如此，我仍觉得应该把这件事讲给你听，这样一来，无论对称赞你的人，还是对你自身而言，都是公平的。因为有着良好品行的人应该有权利知道自己拥有哪些优点——他既可以把他人的称赞当作一种奖赏，也可以当作一种继续前进的动力。

在信中，他们称赞你为人谦恭、有素养，怯懦、粗俗（我想说，这些都曾是你身上出现过的缺点）等缺点经过你不断地磨炼后，已经彻底消失了。对于这个消息，我备感欣慰。因为，正如我对你说的那样，一些被人们忽略了的才能——拥有个人魅力、善于交际、良好的素养、举止端庄、言辞恰当等等，远比人们想象的重要，在英国更是如此。德行与学识就像金子一样，内在价值是无穷的。如果不经过磨炼，它们自然会失去光泽；事实上，哪怕是一块铜，经过打磨后，都要比未经过抛光的金子更受人欢迎……

你已懂得什么是美德，只要你愿意，你就能够拥有它们；每个人通过努力都可以得到这种品质；不具备美德的人是极其可怜的。上帝让你拥有正确的

判断力，而你也通过自身努力掌握了不少知识。因此，在适当的时候，每个人都必须具有美德。拥有了它，你就可以早早地适应社会。如果你在步入社会的时候还未能使自己以美德来完善自身、塑造自己的个性，那么这完全是你的过失。你应该向圣·杰曼夫人和帕皮尼先生致谢，谢谢他们对你的抬爱……

再见了，我的儿子。一定要继续保持下去，这样，你不但可以得到他人的褒奖，还可以享有我对你的爱。

1747年3月6日于伦敦

Philip Dormer Stanhope Chesterfield to His Son

London, March 6, O. S. 1747.

Dear boy,

Whatever you do, will always affect me, very sensibly, one way or another; and I am now most agreeably affected, by two letters, which I have lately seen from Lausanne, upon your subject; the one from Madame St. Germain, the other from Monsieur Pampigny: they both give so good an account of you, that I thought myself obliged, **in justice both to**[1] them and, to you, to let you know it. **Those who deserve a good character**[2], ought to have the satisfaction of knowing that they have it, both as a reward and as an encouragement.



切斯特菲尔德伯爵写给儿子的书信集《致儿家书》一经出版，便成为英国上流社会的"绅士教科书"，书中的许多至理名言至今仍是青年人的人生法宝，在世界各地广为流传。

They write, that you are not only "decrotte," but tolerably well-bred; and that the English crust of awkward bashfulness, shyness, and roughness (of which, by the bye, you had your share) is pretty well **rubbed off**[3]. I am most heartily glad of it; for, as I have often told you, those lesser talents, of an engaging,

insinuating manner, an easy **good-breeding**[4], a genteel behavior and address, are of **infinitely**[5] more advantage than they are generally thought to be, especially here in England. Virtue and learning, like gold, have their **intrinsic**[6] value but if they are not polished, they certainly lose a great deal of their luster; and even polished brass will pass upon more people than rough gold.

You know what virtue is: you may have it if you will; it is in every man's power; and miserable is the man who has it not. Good sense God has given you. Learning you already possess enough of, to have, in a reasonable time, all that a man need have. With this, you are thrown out early into the world, where it will be your own fault if you do not acquire all, the other accomplishments necessary to complete and adorn your character. You will do well to make your compliments to Madame St. Germain and Monsieur Pampigny; and tell them, how sensible you are of their partiality to you …

Adieu. Continue to deserve such **testimonies**[7]; and then you will not only deserve, but enjoy my truest affection.



热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. in justice aboth to 为对……公正，对……作出应有地评价
2. Those who deserve a good character Those 和 who 指代的都是后面所说的具有良好品行的人。
3. rub off *v.* 擦掉，除掉
4. good-breeding 好教养
5. infinitely ['infinitli] *adv.* 无限地，无穷地
6. intrinsic [in'trinsik] *adj.* (指价值、性质)固有的，内在的，本质的



塞缪尔·约翰逊致切斯特菲尔德伯爵的信

作者简介

1709—1784

塞缪尔·约翰逊

Samuel Johnson

英国著名文学评论家、诗人、散文家、传记作家。他曾用八年的时间独力编纂出《英语词典》，这是英语史上第一部也是随后一百年间英国唯一的标准辞书。约翰逊的代表作还有文学评论《莎士比亚戏剧集序言》和《诗人列传》等。

约翰逊在酝酿编纂《英语词典》时，境况十分窘迫，便将他的编纂计划寄给切斯特菲尔德伯爵，希望能够得到他的支持与赞助，但却遭到拒绝；而当约翰逊苦干了八年之后，《英语词典》即将出版之际，切斯特菲尔德却突然在当时的《世界报》上连续发表了两篇文章，对约翰逊的词典大加吹捧，并希望约翰逊能把英国的第一本英语词典送给他。切斯菲尔德之所以这样做，或许是想以此弥补前愆，或许是看到这本词典的分量，想通过撰写颂扬文字的做法，暗示他似乎是约翰逊这本词典的幕后赞助人。约翰逊得知此事后，非常气愤，便给切斯特菲尔德写了这封信，信中的措辞柔中有刚，语气虽谦恭，但内藏讥嘲。

伯爵大人：

近来，我从《世界报》管理者那里获悉，该报曾连载两篇文章，对我所编著的词典大加赞赏，听说这些文章均出自阁下之手。承蒙您如此抬爱，这份荣耀使我受宠若惊，感激之情无以言表，只可惜，对此我已无福消受了。

当年，我鼓足勇气拜访伯爵大人时，我和其他人一样，为大人精彩的演讲而着迷，不禁想大言不惭地喊出：“我就是征服天下之人的征服者。”这种殊荣为世人所垂青，我也不例外，真希望自己有朝一日也能获得。然而，我很快便发现，自己的曲意逢迎并没有得到任何鼓励。维护自尊也好，矜持也罢，总之我无法再继续周旋下去。我本是一个与世无争、不善于阿谀奉承的文人。可是，那一次我也穷尽毕生所学，当众赞美过大人——可谓竭尽全力了。不过，如果一个人在这方面无论多么努力都没能受到重视，他一定不会感到舒服的。

伯爵大人，从我第一次登门造访，或者说被您拒之门外那时算起，已经过去整整七年了。七年来，我一直苦苦地在编辑工作中

拼搏。想必在此时再向您倾诉苦楚已没有任何意义。幸而我的努力没有白费，我的劳动成果很快就要出版了；在此之前，我没有得到任何鼓励，哪怕是一句话语，一丝赞许的微笑都不曾有过。当然，因为我从未得到过他人的赞许，因此也不曾奢望能受到这样的礼遇。

当维吉尔笔下的牧童终于与爱神相识之后，才得知世人所说的爱神不过是个在岩穴里居住的野人而已。伯爵大人，许多人眼见落水者在水中拼命挣扎而无动于衷，直到他们最终爬上岸时，才伸出所谓的援手，难道不嫌太迟了吗？虽说大人如今有雅兴关注我的著作，这原本是件天大的好事，只可惜来得迟了些，以至于我已经对此心灰意冷，并没有什么快意了，更何况，已没有家人与我共同分享，加之我已名扬四海，恐怕已无须再多加任何赞美之词。

既然我从未得到过任何恩惠，自然不需要怀有感恩之心；既然我终将独自一人完成这一著作，自然不愿使公众产生任何错觉，似乎我曾受过某人的恩惠——但愿伯爵大人不会认为这番话太苛刻、太不近人情。

既然我能够在没有任何所谓学术界人士的帮助下独立完成属于自己的工作，并一直走到今天；那么，即便境遇更加艰难，我也会在无助的情况下将全稿完成，而且不会因为艰难而失去信心。因为我早就从那个“被赞助”的美梦中警醒。伯爵大人，曾几何时，我还在梦中自诩是您最卑微、最驯从的仆人。

塞缪尔·约翰逊

1755年2月7日

Samuel Johnson to Chesterfield

7 February 1755.

My Lord,

I have been lately informed by the proprietor of the World that two papers in which my Dictionary is recommended to the public were written by your Lordship. To be so distinguished is an honour which, being very little accustomed to favours from the Great, I know not well how to receive, or in what terms to acknowledge.

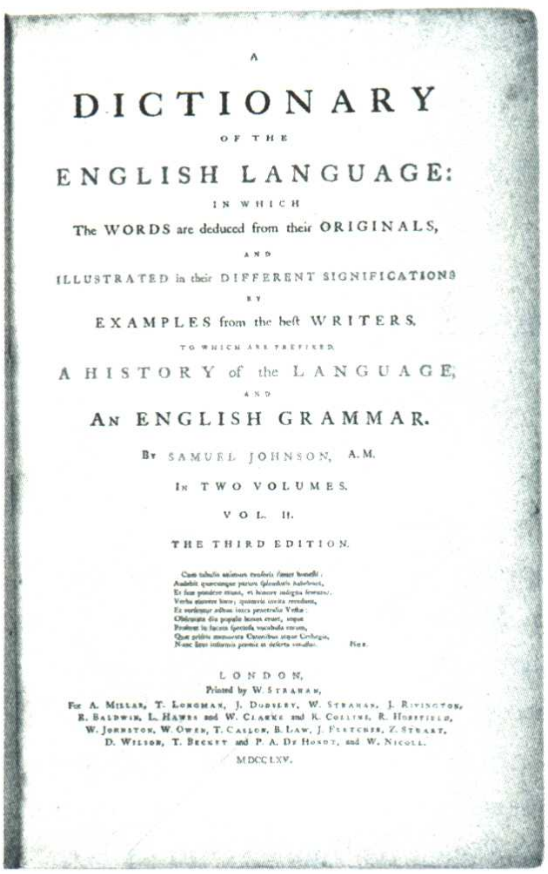
When upon some slight encouragement I first visited your Lordship I was overpowered like the rest of mankind by the enchantment of your address, and could not forbear to wish that I might boast myself Le Vainqueur du Vainqueur de la Terre, that I might obtain that regard for which I saw the world contending, but I found my atten-

dance so little incouraged, that neither pride nor modesty would suffer me to continue it. When I had once addressed your Lordship in public, I had exhausted all the Art of pleasing which a retired and uncourtly Scholar can possess. I had done all that I could, and no man is well pleased to have his all neglected, be it ever so little.

Seven years, My lord have now past since I waited in your outward Rooms or was repulsed from your Door, during which time I have been pushing on my work through difficulties of which it is useless to complain, and have brought it at last to the verge of Publication without one Act of assistance, one word of encouragement, or one smile of favour. Such treatment I did not expect, for I never had a Patron before.

The Shepherd in Virgil grew at last acquainted with Love, and found him a Native of the Rocks. Is not a Patron, My Lord, one who looks with unconcern on a Man struggling for Life in the water and when he has reached ground encumbers him with help. The notice which you have been pleased to take of my Labours, had it been early, had been kind; but it has been delayed till I am indifferent and cannot enjoy it, till I am solitary and cannot impart it, till I am known, and do not want it.

I hope it is no very cynical asperity not to confess obligation where no benefit has been received, or to be unwilling that the Public should consider me as owing that to a Patron, which Providence has enabled me to do for myself.



A

DICTIONARY

OF THE

ENGLISH LANGUAGE:

IN WHICH

The WORDS are deduced from their ORIGINALS,

AND

ILLUSTRATED in their DIFFERENT SIGNIFICATIONS

BY

EXAMPLES from the best WRITERS.

TO WHICH ARE PREFIXED,

A HISTORY of the LANGUAGE,

AND

AN ENGLISH GRAMMAR.

BY SAMUEL JOHNSON, A.M.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

THE THIRD EDITION.

[illegible] Hor.

LONDON,

Printed by W. STRAHAN,

For A. MILLAR, T. LONGMAN, J. DODSLEY, W. STRAHAN, J. RIVINGTON, R. BALDWIN, L. HAWES and W. CLARKE and R. COLLINS, R. HORSFIELD, W. JOHNSTON, W. OWEN, T. CASLON, B. LAW, J. FLETCHER, Z. STUART, D. WILSON, T. BECKET and P. A. DE HONDT, and W. NICOLL.

MDCCLXV.

Having carried on my work thus far with so little obligation to any favourer of Learning I shall not be disappointed though I should conclude it, if less be possible, with less, for I have been long wakened from that Dream of hope, in which I once boasted myself with so much exultation, My lord, Your Lordship's Most humble,

most obedient servant

S.J.

名垂青史的《英语词典》使塞缪尔·约翰逊一举成名，也让不识英才的切斯特菲尔德伯爵陷入尴尬境地。



作者简介 托马斯·亨利·赫胥黎 1825—1895

Thomas Henry Huxley

英国博物学家、英国皇家学会会员、英国科学促进协会主席。赫胥黎因为治学严谨和品格正直，在英国学术界一直享有盛誉。他发表过一百五十多篇科学论文，以对海洋动物的研究著称。赫胥黎是达尔文学说的积极支持者，他竭力宣扬进化论，与当时的宗教势力进行了激烈的斗争，并进一步发展了达尔文的思想，是最早提出人类起源问题的学者之一。主要著作有《人类在自然界的位置》、《脊椎动物解剖学手册》、《无脊椎动物解剖学手册》、《进化论和伦理学》(被我国清朝学者严复译为《天演论》)等。

赫胥黎致母亲的信

亲爱的妈妈：

四个星期以来，好天气伴着和煦的微风，已把我们带到了南方的仙境。我在上封信中已经向您讲述了许多有关玛黛拉岛的奇闻异事，为了不至让您认为我对风景的欣赏已到了痴迷的程度，在此，我就不向您过多地讲述有关瑞欧海港的事情了——我只想说，瑞欧海港正与那不勒斯海湾竞争“世上最美丽的地方”这一称号。单就瑞欧岛上各类郁郁葱葱的植被来说，它一定能够胜过那不勒斯海湾；不过，若从多方面考虑——除去乔治（赫胥黎的哥哥)所描述的景象，瑞欧岛上的天空和海洋的色彩要稍显逊色——远远望去，那不勒斯海湾上一片橄榄绿，仿佛画家调色板上的色彩被冲洗到这里来了似的。

我们来是为了处理一些琐事，这并不会危及到船自身的安全，而且还会使船上的旅人感到更安全、更舒适。我想您应该理解，我曾对您说过，在我们离开玛黛拉岛时，曾经向船内灌入一英尺两英寸深的水，将其清洁了一番，结果您已经知道了，这一次的效果也会同上次一样……

由于在海上漂流已久，我早已适应了船上

的生活。而且,我对于如何使船上的安排能够符合我的需求,以及如何让自己适应船上的生活,已经有了一套完整的理论。我在船上的这段日子过得非常开心,所经历的一切也令我心满意足。回顾整个行程,整体来看是利大于弊。我与船上的高级船员们共同管理船上的一切事物。海图室里,摆放着我所需的书籍和显微镜。在这间屋子里晨读,让我总有一种回到琼脂街那间屋子的感觉。我的顶头上司约翰尼·汤普森是个极其精明的家伙,任何事都瞒不过他的眼睛——无论是人品,还是智慧,他都算得上是一个令我佩服得五体投地的人。如果说我们没能在短时间内成为朋友,那完全是我的错——无论是谁,都有权在船上寻找一个属于自己的朋友。

在海洋与陆地的微风之间,是一片如镜面般平静的海面。若不是我站在甲板上,定会成为大海中的一朵浪花。

1847年1月24日于里约热内卢

相关链接

1859年11月3日,达尔文的科学巨著《物种起源》出版,立即在英国掀起轩然大波。赫胥黎认为,这部论著有着极宝贵的价值,是一本划时代的杰作,它必将引起一场科学思想的深刻革命。于是,他告诉达尔文,他将不惜一切来保卫这一高贵的著作。并郑重地宣布:"我是达尔文的斗犬。"在为宣传进化论而进行的几十年的斗争中,赫胥黎一直站在斗争的最前线,充当捍卫真理的"斗犬"。人们对他捍卫和传播科学真理的崇高品格给予了高度的评价:"如果说进化论是达尔文的蛋,那么,孵化它的就是赫胥黎。"

Thomas Henry Huxley to His Mother

Rio de Janeiro, January 24, 1847.

My dear Mother,

Four weeks of lovely weather and **uninterrupted**[1] fair winds brought us to this southern fairyland. In my last letter I told you a considerable **yarn**[2] about Madeira, I guess, and so for fear lest you should imagine me scenery mad I will spare you any **description**[3] of Rio Harbour. Suffice it to say that it contends with the Bay of Naples for the title of the most beautiful place in the world. It must beat Naples in **luxuri-**

ance[4] and variety of vegetation, but from all accounts, to say nothing of George's (his eldest brother) picture, falls behind it in the colours of sky and sea, that of the latter being in the harbour and for some distance outside of a dirty olive green like the washings of a painter's **palette**[5].

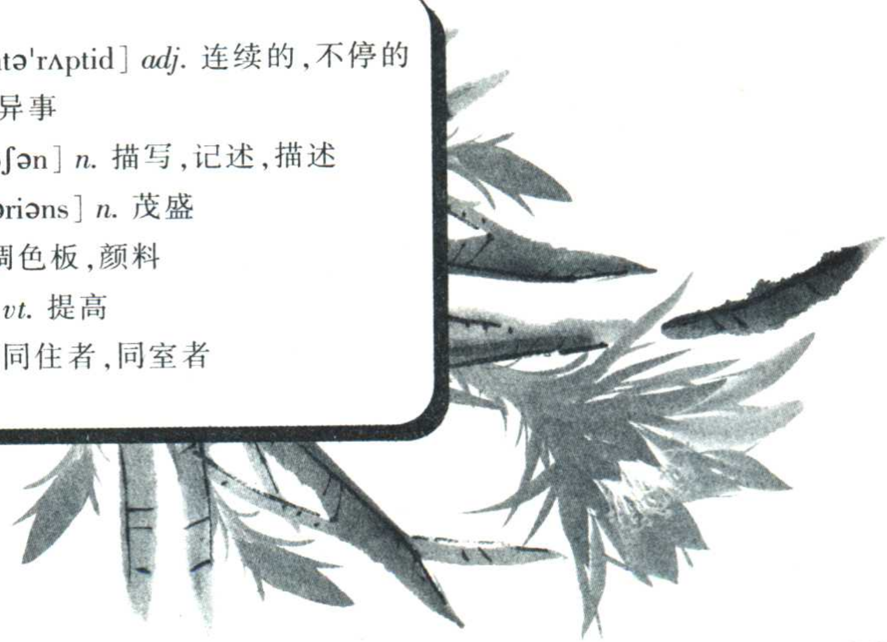
We have come in for the purpose of effecting some trifling repairs, which, though not essential to the safety of the ship, will nevertheless naturally **enhance**[6] the comfort of its **inmates**[7]. This you will understand when I tell you that in consequence of these same defects I have had water an inch or two deep in my cabin, wish-washing about ever since we left Madeira…

We have been quite long enough at sea now to enable me to judge how I shall get on in the ship, and to form a very clear idea of how it fits me and how I fit it. In the first place I am exceedingly well and exceedingly contented with my lot. My opinion of the advantages lying open to me increases rather than otherwise as I see my way about me. I am on capital terms with all the superior officers, and I find them ready to give me all facilities. I have a place for my books and microscope in the chart room, and there I sit and read in the morning much as though I were in my rooms in Agar Street. My immediate superior, Johnny Thompson, is a long-headed good fellow without a morsel of humbug about him — a man whom I thoroughly respect, both morally and intellectually. I think it will be my fault if we are not fast friends through the commission. One friend on board a ship is as much as anybody has a right to expect.

It is just the interval between the sea and the land breezes, the sea like glass, and not a breath stirring. I shall become soup if I do not go on deck.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. uninterrupted [ˈʌnintəˈrʌptid] *adj.* 连续的，不停的
2. yarn [jaːn] *n.* 奇闻异事
3. description [disˈkripʃən] *n.* 描写，记述，描述
4. luxuriance [lʌgˈzjʊəriəns] *n.* 茂盛
5. palette [ˈpælit] *n.* 调色板，颜料
6. enhance [inˈhaːns] *vt.* 提高
7. inmate [ˈinmeit] *n.* 同住者，同室者





简·奥斯汀致姐姐的信

作者简介

1775—1817

简·奥斯汀

Jane Austen

英国著名小说家，是最早在作品里真实地描绘日常生活中平凡人物形象的作家。奥斯汀一生共创作了六部长篇小说，1811年出版的《理智与情感》是她的处女作，两年后发表的代表作《傲慢与偏见》则将她推上了文学创作的顶峰。奥斯汀的作品风格轻松诙谐，富有喜剧性冲突，她以女性特有的细致入微的观察力，真实地描绘了她周围世界的小天地，尤其是绅士淑女间的婚姻和爱情风波。十九世纪初，庸俗夸张的戏剧性浪漫小说充斥英国文坛，而奥斯汀的小说破旧立新，一反常规地展现了当时尚未受到资本主义工业革命冲击的英国乡村中产阶级的日常生活和田园风光，尽管反映的广度和深度有限，但对改变当时小说创作中的庸俗风气起到了很好的作用，在英国小说的发展史上有承上启下的意义。

史帝文顿：

我刚刚收到你和玛丽的来信，虽说信中内容应该更令人愉悦些，不管怎样，我还是要谢谢你们。我并没指望能够在星期二见到你，因为事情似乎进展得并不顺利；如果你过了星期二还不能来，我们就很难在星期六之前接你了。对我而言，为了能够提前两天与你相见，不去参加舞会根本算不了什么；伊莱扎生病的消息使大家都感到很难过。不过，从你写信时起，她的身体就开始一点点在恢复了，你来到这儿，不但不会影响她恢复健康，反而是件好事。可是，查尔斯却事先预订了舞会入场券！就好像他把一生的激情都投入到这场舞会里来了似的！

我昨天给你寄去了一封信，内容不长，也没有太多趣事。因此，就算你没有收到它，也没什么大不了的。我只是想告诉你，库珀一家已经平安到达目的地了。小男孩儿非常喜欢库珀博士，而小女孩儿则更喜欢简——这是他们告诉我的。

明天晚上在阿西娅举办的晚会肯定少不了爱德华·库珀——少了他，舞会就没有任何意义了。布勒正和我们待在一起——我非常希

望在舞会期间能够得到朋友的帮助，但如果他不肯脱掉那件白色外套的话，我决不和他跳舞。

我的上一封信能够得到你的表扬，我非常开心，我只是为了声名而写，绝非贪图利益。

爱德华和他的朋友约翰·莱福一起出去了，恐怕今天不会回来了。安娜就在我们身边——她原本是和自己的堂兄弟姊妹们一同乘车出游去了，不过她似乎对此没有什么兴趣，反倒是卡罗琳的纺纱车使她觉得很新奇。玛丽告诉我说，弗拉夫妇非常喜欢你，这使我备感欣慰。希望你能继续为身边人带去快乐……

爱你的妹妹简·奥斯汀
1796年1月16日 星期四

相关链接

在简·奥斯汀的作品中，关于年轻女性婚姻和爱情的别具一格的描写给人留下了最深刻的印象。尽管没有财产的妇女的社会出路问题是英国小说中的"老生常谈"，但奥斯汀在其小说中对这一主题却旧瓶装新酒，做了独特的喜剧性处理。在名著《傲慢与偏见》里，她曾用戏谑的口吻说班奈特太太的"毕生大志"就是把五个女儿都嫁出去。这部小说著名的第一章描写班奈特太太一听说有个阔少定居在附近，就盘算着如何把一个女儿打发给他。不管是哪一个，任他挑选。这段鞭辟入里的刻画，便是奥斯汀喜剧风格的典范。

Jane Austen to Her Sister

Thursday (January 16) 1796.
Steventon,

I have just received yours and Mary's letter, and I thank you both, though their contents might have been more **agreeable**[1]. I do not at all expect to see you on Tuesday, since matters have fallen out so pleasantly; and if you are not able to return till after that day, it will hardly be possible for us to send for you before Saturday, though for my own part I care so little about the ball that it would be no sacrifice to me to give it up for the sake of seeing you two days earlier. We are extremely sorry for poor

Eliza's illness. I trust, however, that she has continued to recover since you wrote, and that you will none of you be the worse for your attendance on her. What a **good-for-nothing**[2] fellow Charles is to bespeak the stockings! I hope he will be too hot all the rest of his life for it!

I sent you a letter yesterday, it was not very long or very witty, and therefore if you never receive it, it does not much **signify**[3]. I wrote principally to tell you that the Coopers were arrived and in good health. The little boy is very like Dr. Cooper, and the little girl is to resemble Jane, they say.

Our party to Ashe tomorrow night will consist of Edward Cooper, James (for a ball is nothing without him), Buller, who is now staying with us, and I look forward with great impatience to it, as I rather expect to receive an offer from my friend in the course of the evening. I shall refuse him, however, unless he promises to give away his white coat.

I am very much flattered by your **commendation**[4] of my last letter, for I write only for fame, and without any view to pecuniary emolument.

Edward is gone to spend the day with his friend, John Lyford, and does not return till tomorrow. Anna is now here; she came up in her chaise to spend the day with her young cousins, but she does not much take to them or to anything about them, except Caroline's **spinning-wheel**[5]. I am very glad to find from Mary that Mr. and Mrs. Fowle are pleased with you. I hope you will continue to give satisfaction …

With best love, I am **affectionately**[6] yours,

J. Austen.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. agreeable [ə'griəbl] *adj.* 使人愉快的，惬意的，适合的
2. good-for-nothing = good for nothing 毫无价值
3. signify ['signifai] *vt.* 表示，意味
4. commendation [ˌkɔmen'deiʃən] *n.* 赞扬，称赞
5. spinning-wheel = spinning wheel 手纺车
6. affectionately [ə'fekʃənətli] *adv.* 挚爱地，亲切地





作者简介 1797—1856

亨利希·海涅

Heinrich Heine

德国著名诗人、政论家。生于一个犹太商人家庭。青少年时期的海涅曾先后在数所大学学习法律和哲学，并从事写作。1830年法国"七月革命"后，海涅迁居巴黎。

海涅是歌德之后德国最重要的诗人，他的早期作品主要有抒情诗集《歌集》和四卷《旅行记》。旅居法国后，海涅又创作了代表作长诗《德国，一个冬天的童话》和文艺论著《论浪漫派》。此外，为支援西里西亚纺织工人起义写作的《西里西亚织工之歌》也是海涅的名作之一。

1848年，海涅不幸患上严重的瘫痪症，在这期间，"小狐狸"一直精心照料着海涅，但这只"小狐狸"只有个"卡蜜尔·塞尔登"的笔名，真名不详。本文可能是海涅与她热恋时的情书。

海涅致卡蜜尔·塞尔登的信

最可爱的小狐狸！请允许我这样称呼你，不然，就让我以你的信所散发出的香气为你取个名字吧！如果可以，我一定要叫你"最可爱的麝香小猫"。你的信我已于前天收到，我由衷地感谢你对我付出的真情……我和你一样，一想到很快就可见到你，并能够在来自斯瓦比亚的人儿脸上留下"难忘的印记"时，我就感到无比兴奋。啊，就让我用这真诚的言语来表达一个普通人对你的爱恋吧。希望你能够欣然接受我这颗炽热的心，却又唯恐自己太过奢求……不管怎样，一想到能够再次见到你，我就十分高兴。最迷人的麝香小猫！同时又像安哥拉猫一样温顺，这正是我喜欢的类型。长久以来，我一直很喜欢山猫，但山猫太凶险，而且，它还会时不时地在你脸上留下令人不悦的"难忘的印记"。我的境况不是很好，除了常常烦恼，就是大发脾气。这真令人感到绝望。再见了，愿海浪能够使你更坚强、更健康！

致以最诚挚的问候

你的朋友海涅

Heinrich Heine to Camile Sleden

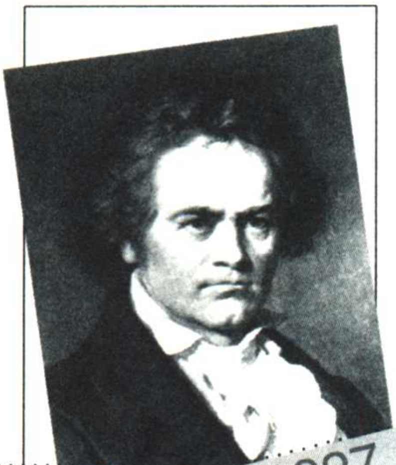
Sweetest of fines **mouches**[1]! or, leaving the **emblem**[2] of your seal, is it the perfume of your letter that I should call you? In that case must I say "Dearest of **musk**[3]-scented cats?" I received your note the day before yesterday; its little fly tracks run constantly in my head, perhaps also even in my heart, my most hearty thanks for all the affection that you show me … I, too, **rejoice**[4] in the thought of seeing you soon again, and of making a living print' upon those sweet and Swabian features. Ah; that phrase would have less platonic meaning were I only still a man. But I am nothing more than a spirit; that may suit you, but me it only suits after a **mediocre**[5] fashion … Yes, I rejoice in the thought of seeing you again, fine mouches of my soul! Most **fascinating**[6] of musk cats! But at the same times as mild as an Angora cat, a species which I prefer. For a long time I loved tiger cats; but they are too dangerous, and the "**living prints**[7]" which they sometimes left upon my face were unpleasing. Things are going very badly with me, nothing but a succession of **vexations**[8] and fits of rage. Fury against my condition which is desperate! Goodbye. May the waters strengthen you and do you good.

Most affectionate greetings,

Heine.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. mouch [muːtʃ] *vi.* 蹒跚地走，偷，在文中是“狐狸”的意思，是一种爱称。
2. emblem ['embləm] *v.* 用象征表示
3. musk [mʌsk] *n.* 一种鹿的名称
4. rejoice [ri'dʒɔis] *v.* (使)欣喜
5. mediocre [ˌmiːdi'əukə] *adj.* 普普通通的
6. fascinating ['fæsineitiŋ] *adj.* 迷人的
7. living prints 在文中指“难忘的印记”。
8. vexation [vek'seiʃən] *n.* 恼怒，烦恼



作者简介 1770—1827
贝多芬
Beethoven

德国最伟大的音乐家之一。出生于德国波恩的一个平民家庭。贝多芬很早就显露了音乐上的才能，八岁就开始登台演出。1792年，他到维也纳深造，并创作出大量充满时代气息的优秀作品，如交响曲《英雄》、《命运》，序曲《哀格蒙特》，钢琴奏鸣曲《悲怆》、《月光》、《暴风雨》、《热情》等等。贝多芬一生坎坷，没有建立家庭。二十六岁时开始耳聋，晚年全聋，在这种状况下，他依然自强不息，写下了不朽名作《第九交响曲》。贝多芬的作品个性鲜明，而且几乎涉及当时所有的音乐体裁。他集古典音乐之大成，同时开辟了浪漫主义音乐的道路，对世界音乐的发展有着举足轻重的作用，被后人尊称为"乐圣"。

贝多芬一生孤独，信中这位"永恒的爱人"，身份扑朔迷离，无从查考。而且此信从未寄出，直到他去世以后，人们才在他的遗物中发现此信并公之于众。

贝多芬致其"永恒的爱人"的信

1

我的天使，我的一切，我的自我：

今天我只想写几句话，而且我想用你的铅笔来写。明天我才能将住所最终确定下来，这可真是浪费时间啊！为什么当我提起不得不说的话时内心之中会充满忧伤呢？——我们两人的爱情除了牺牲，或互不相求之外，是否能够长久？你能够改变现在这种彼此不能完全拥有的局面吗？

哦，上帝啊！只要你看看这大自然的美景，那么对于那些必然会发生的事情，你就可以得到宽慰。爱情需要付出的一切都是非常有道理的。这一点对于你我而言都是如此。我们必须为彼此而生存，但也不要把这一切压在心头。如果我们完全结合在一起，那么你一定会和我一样，几乎感受不到任何痛苦。

我的旅程可真是糟糕——我昨天早晨四点钟才来到这里。因为马匹不足，我们选择从另外一条路走，可那是多么糟糕的一条路啊！在距目的地还有两站的时候，有人建议我们不要在夜间赶路。这使我面对将要经过的树林时

感到十分害怕。不过这种畏惧感只是让我更想快点通过它——事实上我错了，我们选择了一条泥泞不堪的路，马车不得不走走停停。如果车夫不在，恐怕我就会陷到泥浆里去了。亚斯哈兹驾着八匹马的马车路过这里，看情形他们的境况与我们四匹马的境况没有什么差别。然而，当我们成功到达目的地的时候却从中得到了很多欢乐。

现在事情发生了很大的改变，我们很快就可以见面了。今天我不能同你一起分享我最近几天的生活经历了。如果我们的心总是紧紧地连在一起我就不会这样说了。我的心里仍有好多话要向你诉说。唉！有时我觉得言语根本无法表达我内心的全部感受。开心些，愿你永远做我唯一的宝贝，像我爱你一样爱我。至于我们将来的路会怎样走，神自有主张。

贝多芬

7月6日晨

2

原来，我最亲爱的人正在受苦——我刚刚才得知，只有周一到周四这四天时间才会有邮车经过这里驶往K城，而且信件必须在清晨寄出才能使你尽快收到。

哦，我的爱人，无论我身在何方，你都在那里守候着我。我相信，我们终究会生活在一起的。

没有你的日子怎能称得上是生活！——为了人类的幸福而东奔西走——我岂能胜任？

世人卑躬屈膝的样子令我痛苦不堪。可是，当我将自己与浩瀚的宇宙相比，我又算得了什么！被人们推崇备至的英雄豪杰又算得了什么！

一想到你也许要到星期六才能收到我的第一封信时，我不禁潸然泪下。你给我的爱很深，而我给你的爱却更深。然而，绝不要对我隐瞒你的思想。晚安，我要去洗澡，马上要就寝了。

哦，上帝啊！我们虽远隔天涯，但心却紧紧地连在一起！

我们的爱情难道不是一座真正的天宫吗？它一定会像苍天一样永不老去。

贝多芬

7月6日星期一 晚

3

早安，我永远的爱人，虽然我还未起床，但我的思绪已飞到了你的身旁——时而高兴，时而忧伤，不知命运是否会顺从我们的心愿。

若无法与你生活在一起，我根本没有生存下去的勇气。因此，我决定离开你外出漂泊，直到我能够真正飞到你的怀抱之中，对你说："我真的回来了，我的灵魂会将你紧紧地包围，让我们一同生活在仙境之中吧！"

无论不幸何时袭来，你都要坚信——我对你是忠诚的！除了你，再不会有人占据我的心！永远不会！

哦，上帝！为什么要让相爱的人离别？为什么要让我们的生活充满烦恼？

你的爱使我变成了世上最幸福的人，同时也是世上最痛苦的人。像我这样的年纪，需要的是一个安宁的生活——难道我们无法做到这一点吗？

我的天使，我刚刚听说，邮车每天都会经过这里，所以，我必须搁笔了，这样你很快就可以收到我的信了。

冷静些，只有冷静地考虑一下我们的现状，才能最终达成我们生活在一起的目标。

请你更理智地爱我吧，无论何时，我都在渴望着你的爱——你——我的妻子——我的全部！再见了。

请你爱我吧，不要辜负了你所爱的人那颗最忠诚的心。

我永远属于你，

你永远属于我，

我们永远属于彼此。

贝多芬

7月7日

Beethoven to His "Immortal Beloved"

1

July 6, in the morning.

My angel, my all, my very self,

Only a few words today and at that with pencil (with yours) — Not till tomorrow

will my lodgings be definitely determined upon — what a useless waste of time — Why this deep sorrow when necessity speaks — can our love endure except through sacrifices, through not demanding everything from one another; can you change the fact that you are not wholly mine, I not wholly thine.

Oh God, look out into the beauties of nature and comfort your heart with that which must be Love demands everything and that very justly — thus it is to me with you, and to you with me. But you forget so easily that I must live for me and for you; if we were wholly united you would feel the pain of it as little as I.

My journey was a fearful one; I did not reach here until 4 o'clock yesterday morning. Lacking horses the post — coach chose another route, but what an awful one; at the stage before the last I was warned not to travel at night; I was made fearful of a forest, but that only made me the more eager — and I was wrong. The coach must needs break down on the wretched road, a bottomless mud road. Without such postilions as I had with me I should have remained stuck in the road. Esterhazy, traveling the usual road here, had the same fate with eight horses that I had with four — Yet I got some pleasure out of it, as I always do when I successfully overcome difficulties.

Now a quick change to things internal from things external. We shall surely see each other soon; moreover, today I cannot share with you the thoughts I have had during these last few days touching my own life. If our hearts were always close together, I would have none of these. My heart is full of so many things to say to you — ah — there are moments when I feel that speech amounts to nothing at all — Cheer up — remain my true, my only treasure, my all as I am yours. The gods must send us the rest, what for us must and shall be.

2

Evening, Monday, July 6

You are suffering, my dearest creature only now have I learned that letters must be posted very early in the morning on Mondays to Thursdays — the only days on which the mail — coach goes from here to K.

You are suffering Ah, wherever I am, there you are also. I will arrange it with you and me that I can live with you.

What a life!!! thus!!! without you pursued by the goodness of mankind hither and thither-which I as little want to deserve as I deserve it.

Humility of man towards man — it pains me. and when I consider myself in relation to the universe, what am I and what is He — whom we call the greatest and yet herein lies the divine in man.

I weep when I reflect that you will probably not receive the first report from me until Saturday. Much as you love me — I love you more. But do not ever conceal yourself from me — good night.As I am taking the baths I must go to bed.

Oh God! so near! so far!

Is not our love truly a heavenly structure, and also as firm as the vault of heaven?

3

July 7

Good morning,

Though still in bed, my thoughts go out to you, my Immortal Beloved, now and then joyfully, then sadly, waiting to learn whether or not fate will hear us.

I can live only wholly with you or not at all.Yes, I am resolved to wander so long away from you until I can fly to your arms and say that I am really at home with you, and can send my soul enwrapped in you into the land of spirits.

Yes, unhappily it must be so. You will be the more contained since you know my fidelity to you. No one else can ever possess my heart — never — never.

Oh God, why must one be parted from one whom one so loves. And yet my life in V is now a wretched life.

Your love makes me at once the happiest and the unhappiest of men. At my age I need a steady, quiet life — can that be so in our connection?

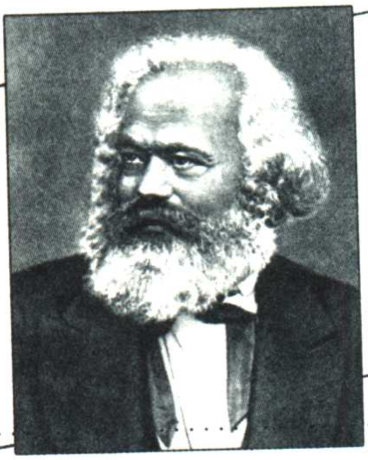
My angel, I have just been told that the mailcoach goes every day, therefore I must close at once so that you may receive the letter at once.

Be calm, only by a calm consideration of our existence can we achieve our purpose to live together.

Be calm — love me — today — yesterday — what tearful longings for you — you — you — my life — my all — farewell.

Oh continue to love me — never misjudge the most faithful heart of your beloved.

ever thine
ever mine
ever ours
Beethoven.



马克思致燕妮的信

作者简介 1818—1883

卡尔·马克思

Karl Marx

全世界无产阶级的伟大导师和领袖，生于德国普鲁士的一个和谐幸福的律师家庭。1841年，马克思从德国柏林大学毕业后，获得哲学博士学位，其后他积极投身于政治斗争。由于马克思坚定维护民众利益，因此被反动政府视为眼中钉。1843年，马克思被迫离开了德国，来到法国巴黎。在这里，他广泛参与工人阶级运动，越来越清楚地认识到建立"共产主义"的必要性。从此，马克思以更加完整、系统、科学的理论，全面投入革命实践，为无产阶级革命做出了巨大的贡献。他的著作极为丰富，主要有《共产党宣言》、《资本论》第一卷等。

马克思真诚地爱着燕妮，并为能得到她的青睐而自豪。同样，燕妮也深爱着他，全然不顾家庭以及她所属的那个阶级的指责，把爱献给了生活清贫却执著追求理想的马克思。以下就是马克思于1856年6月21日写给燕妮的信。

亲爱的：

我又给你写信了，因为我孤独，因为我感到难过，我只能一直在心里与你交谈，但你根本不知道，既听不到我的心声，又不能给我回应。你的照片照得虽然不是很好，但对我却极有用处，我现在才明白为什么最丑陋的圣母像——《阴郁的圣母》也能拥有狂热的崇拜者，甚至比一些优美的画像拥有更多的崇拜者。无论如何，没有一幅《阴郁的圣母》像能够像你这张照片一样得到过如此多的亲吻、注视和爱慕。你这张照片虽然称不上阴郁，但至少也是灰暗的，它绝对没有反映出你那可爱、活泼、诱人、温柔的脸庞。我把被阳光晒坏的地方修补好了，我发现我的眼睛虽然因灯光和烟雾而受损，但不管是在睡梦之中，还是清醒时分，仍能描绘你的形象。你仿佛真的就在我的眼前，我想把你拥在怀中，吻遍你的全身，跪倒在你的面前，叹息着说："我爱你，夫人！"我真的非常爱你，我对你的爱远胜过威尼斯的摩尔人所感受到的爱。虚伪和空虚的世界对人的看法也是虚假和表面化的。那些诽谤我、污蔑我的敌人之中，有谁曾骂过我，说我在二流戏院扮演一流情人的角色呢？可事实上我正是如此，要是

那些坏蛋稍微聪明一点的话，他们本该在一边画上“生产关系和交换关系”，而在另一边画上我拜倒你面前的形象，并在下边题上“请看看这幅画，再看看那幅画”。但那些坏蛋都是蠢货，并且永远都那么愚蠢。

短暂的别离是有益的，因为频繁的接触会让人感觉乏味，会使事物之间的差别逐渐消失。过近的距离内甚至宝塔也显得矮小，而日常生活中的平凡琐事，如果过从甚密，则会变得庞繁起来。感情方面也是同样道理。由于过分亲密地接触，小小的恶习通常也会引起反感甚至愤怒，但只要目标在视野中消失，也就相安无事了。深挚的感情由于双方的亲近，会表现为日常习惯，但在离别的魔法般的影响下，会变得壮大起来，并重新拥有它自身的魅力。我的爱情就是这样。一旦我们为空间所分隔，我就会立即明白，时间之于我的爱情正如阳光雨露之于植物——使其茁壮生长。只要你远离我的身边，我对你的爱情就会显露出它的本来面目——巨人一般的面目。我的全部精力和所有感情都集中在了这份爱情里。我又一次觉得自己是一个真正的人，因为我感受到了一份强烈的感情。学习和现代教育所带给我们的复杂性，以及使我们不可避免地对一切主、客观印象都不相信的怀疑主义，只能使我们变得渺小、孱弱、暴躁、优柔寡断。然而爱情——不是对费尔巴哈式的人的爱，不是对摩莱有特式的“物质交换”的爱，不是对无产阶级的爱，而是对亲爱的人，尤其是对你的爱，使一个人再次成为真正意义上的人。

亲爱的，你该笑了吧，并且奇怪为什么我突然间变得巧舌如簧？不过，如果我能够把你那温柔而纯洁的心紧贴在自己的心上，我就会默默无语，一声不吭。我不能以唇吻你，只好以绵绵情话来传达我的吻。我甚至能将奥维德的《哀歌》重新以韵文的形式写成德文的《哀书》。奥维德只是被国王奥古斯都放逐而已，而我却被迫与你远离，这是奥维德所无法理解的。

诚然，这世间有许多的女人，而且有些非常美丽，但是哪里还能找到一副容颜，它的每一根线条，甚至每一处皱纹，都能唤起我生命中最强烈、最美好的回忆？在你甜美的面容上，我甚至能读出我的无限哀愁以及无可挽回的损失，但当我亲吻你那可爱的面庞时，一切悲痛便都不复存在了。“在她的怀抱中埋葬，因她的亲吻而复活”，有了你的拥抱和亲吻，我既不需要婆罗门和毕达哥拉斯的转世学说，也不需要基督教的复活学说。

最后，告诉你几件事。今天我给艾萨克·埃恩赛德寄去了一组文章中的第一篇，并附上了我亲笔用英文写的便条。在这篇文章寄走之前，弗里德里希曾看过，说实话，当时他不言不语、皱着眉头的样子，使我有些不快，但当他读

后，感到非常惊奇，并高呼如此重要的著作应该以另一种形式出版，首先用德文出版。我将把初版的书寄给你和德国的老历史学家施洛塞尔。

顺便告诉你，在《奥格斯堡报》(它直接引用了我们就科伦共产党人案件的讨论所发的通函)上，我看到了从伦敦发出的、"似乎"来自同一来源的另一份通函，它是由施梯伯先生根据我们的东西所改编、拼凑出来的可怜的伪造品。这位先生由于近来在普鲁士混得不太得意，现在想在汉诺威装成一个大人物。我和恩格斯将在奥格斯堡的《总汇报》上对其予以驳斥。

再见了，我的亲爱的。千万次地吻你和孩子们。

你的卡尔

1856年6月21日于曼彻斯特

相关链接

马克思中学毕业时刚刚17岁，这时，21岁的燕妮郑重地对他说："我愿意做您多方面永远可以信任的忠实的朋友，我愿意看到您成为伟人。"马克思上了一年大学后，终于向燕妮表白了爱情，但是随后他们经过了7年的痛苦别离。马克思在这七年中写了三本诗集，都是写给燕妮的"情书"，有着极强的艺术感染力和深刻的思想。

Marx to Jenny Marx

Manchester, 21 June 1856.
34 Butler Street, Greenheys
My darling Sweetheart,

I am writing to you again because I am alone and because it is irksome to converse with you all the time in my head without you knowing or hearing or being able to answer me. Bad as your portrait is, it serves its end well enough, and I now understand how it is that even the least **flattering**[1] portraits of the mother of God, the Black Madonnas' could have their inveterate admirers — more admirers, indeed, than the good portraits. At any rate, none of these Black Madonna' portraits has ever been so much kissed and ogled and adored as your photograph which, while admittedly not black, has a **crabbed expression**[2] and in no way reflects your dear, lovely, kissable, dolce countenance. But I put right what the sun's rays have wrongly depicted, discov-

ering that my eyes, spoiled though they are by lamplight and tobacco smoke, can **nevertheless**[3] paint not only in the dreaming but also in the waking state. There you are before me, large as life, and I lift you up in my arms and I **kiss you all over from top to toe**[4], and I fall on my knees before you and cry: Madame, I love you, and love you I do, with a love greater than was ever felt by the Moor of Venice. Falsely and foully doth the false and foul world all characters construe. Who of my many calumniators and **venomous**[5]-tongued enemies has ever reproached me with being called upon to play the romantic lead in a second-rate theatre? And yet it is true. Had the **scoundrels**[6] possessed the wit, they would have depicted the productive and social relations' on one side and, on the other, myself at your feet. Beneath it they would have written: Look to this picture and to that. But stupid the scoundrels are and stupid they will remain, in seculum seculorum [forever and ever].

Temporary absence is good, for in a person's presence things look too much alike for them to be distinguished. At close quarters even towers appear dwarfed, whereas what is petty and **commonplace**[7], seen close at hand, assumes undue proportions. So, too, with the passions. Little habits which, by their very **proximity**[8], **obtrude**[9] upon one, and thus assume the form of passions, vanish as soon as their immediate object is out of sight. Great passions which, by the proximity of their object, take on the form of little habits, wax large and resume their natural proportions under the magical effect of distance. So it is with my love. Mere spatial separation from you suffices to make me instantly aware that time has done for my love just what the sun and the rain do for plants — made it grow. My love for you, as soon as you are away from me, appears for what it is, a giant, and into it all the vigour of my mind and all the ardour of my heart are compressed. I feel myself once more a man because I feel intense passion, and the multifariousness in which we are involved by study and modern education, no less than the scepticism which inevitably leads us to cavil at every subjective and objective impression, is calculated to render each one of us petty and weak and fretful and vacillating. But love, not for Feuerbachian Man, not for Moleschottian metabolism, not for the **proletariat**[10], but love for a sweetheart and notably for yourself, turns a man back into a man again.

You will smile, my dear heart, and wonder why this rhetoric all of a sudden? But if I could press your sweet white bosom to mine, I would be silent and say not a word. Since I cannot kiss with my lips I must kiss with my tongue and frame words. I could, indeed, even frame verse, German Books of Sorrow after the manner of Ovid's Libri Tristium. He, however, had merely been banished by the Emperor Augustus; I have been banished from you, and that is something Ovid could not understand.

There are, indeed, many women in the world, and a few of them are beautiful. But where else shall I find a face of which every lineament, every fine even, reawakens the greatest and sweetest memories of my life? In your sweet countenance I can read even

my infinite sorrows, my irreplaceable losses, and when I kiss your sweet face I kiss away my sorrow. Buried in her arms, revived by her kisses' — in your arms, that is, and by your kisses — and let the Brahmins and Pythagoras keep their doctrine of rebirth, and Christianity its doctrine of resurrection.

To conclude with some facts. I have today sent Isaac Ironside the first paper of the series and have, in addition, made notes (i.e. on the text of the despatches) in my own hand and in my own English. I must say I felt a bit anxious when Frederic with that little quizzical look he has, calmly read through the stuff before it was sent off. But for the first time he was quite astonished and exclaimed that this important work ought to be published in another form and, above all things, to be published in German. I shall send the first issue to you and to old Schlosser, the historian, in Germany.

Apropos. I see from the Augsburger, which refers directly to our circular letters discussed at the communist trial in Cologne, that another circular letter, reputedly' from the same source, has been sent out from London. It is a forgery, a miserable gallimaufry of our things, put together by Mr Stieber who, not having been accorded due honour in Prussia of late, now seeks to set himself up as a great man in Hanover. Engels and I intend to publish a counter-statement in the Augsburg Allgemeine Zeitung.

Farewell my dear heart. A thousand kisses to you, and the children too, from

Your Karl.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. flattering ['flætəriŋ] *adj.* 讨人喜欢的
2. crabbed epression 在文中是指"没有反映出"
3. nevertheless [ˌnevəðə'les] *conj.* 然而，不过
4. kiss you all over from top to toe 在文中指"吻遍你全身"。
5. venomous ['venəməs] *adj.* 有毒的，狠毒的
6. scoundrel ['skaundrəl] *adj.* 卑鄙的
7. commonplace ['kɔmənpleis] *n.* 平凡的事
8. proximity [prɔk'simiti] *n.* 接近，亲近
9. obtrude [əb'truːd] *vt.* 强迫，强加
10. proletariat [ˌprəule'tɛəriət] *n.* (古罗马社会中)最下层阶级，工人阶级



1713—1784

丹尼斯·狄德罗 Denis Diderot

法国哲学家、百科全书派代表人物。生于郎格里，1732年获得巴黎大学文科硕士学位。狄德罗精通意、英等几国文字，以译述A.A.C.沙夫茨伯里的《德性研究》而著称。但他的主要成就是编写《百科全书》。在他周围聚集了伏尔泰、达兰贝尔、霍尔巴赫、格里姆、卢梭等一批当代卓越的思想家、科学家、文学家。这部巨著普及科学知识，宣扬理性主义，反对宗教愚昧，希望知识产生实际效益，增进人类幸福，指引人们重视工艺和技巧，使技术同科学相结合，以增加控制自然的力量。

这封信是狄德罗写给其爱人的，表达了他对爱人的炽热爱恋。

狄德罗致索菲·波莱德的信

我的爱人：

在我离开之前必须和你说几句话。我知道你对我寄予了无尽的期望。你曾说过，你把自己的幸福、生活，甚至一切都寄托在我对你的爱上面。亲爱的索菲，请不要怀疑我对你的爱，它将会是永恒的；你一定要坚强地生活下去！你一定要幸福！我决不会辜负你，永远不会！我永远属于你！……你就是我的一切，无论未来的人生旅途之中会遇到怎样的艰难险阻，我们都要不离不弃！当我们陷入困境时，一定能够得到彼此的安慰。我希望你对我的爱永远不会变！而我，自你见到我的那一天起，我对你的爱就未曾改变过。

我并没有夸大其词，平心而论，这一切都是我的肺腑之言。我相信，随着时间的流逝你一定会感受到我对你的这份深情；请相信，我对你的爱至死不渝，没有人像我这样爱你爱得如此之深。亲爱的索菲，对我而言，你的可爱是无与伦比的。你深深地吸引了我，我是那样爱你。这种真挚的情感永远不会改变。

晚安，亲爱的索菲，被爱人所爱，真是一件无比幸福的事情。

相关链接

追求完美的狄德罗

有一天,一位朋友送给丹尼斯·狄德罗一件质地精良、做工考究、图案高雅的睡袍。他非常喜欢,穿着它在房子里找感觉。他发现家具的风格有些不对,地毯的针脚也粗得吓人。于是为了与睡袍配套,他先后更换了一些家具,使家具跟上了睡袍的档次。

Diderot to Sophia Poland

I cannot leave this place without saying a few words to you. So, my **pet**[1], **you expect a good deal from me**[2]. Your happiness, your life, even depend, you say, upon my ever loving you! Never fear, my dear Sophia; that will endure, and you shall live, and be happy. I have never committed a crime yet, and am not going to begin. I am wholly yours … you are everything to me; we will **sustain**[3] each other in all the ills of life it may please fate to inflict upon us; you will **soothe**[4] my troubles; I will comfort you in yours. Would that I could always see you as you have been lately! As for myself, you must **confess**[5] that I am just as I was on the first day you saw me.

This is no merit of my own; but I owe it in justice to myself to tell you so. It is one effect of good qualities to be felt more **vividly**[6] from day to day. Be assured of my **constancy**[7] to yours, and of my appreciation of them. Never was a passion more justified by reason than mine. Is it not true, my dear Sophia, that you are very amiable? Examine yourself … see how worthy you are of being loved; and know that I love you very much. That is the unvarying standard of my feelings.

Good night, my dear Sophia. I am as happy as man can be in knowing that I am loved by the best of woman.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. pet [pet] *adj.* 亲爱的,为昵称
2. you expect a good deal from me "你对我寄予了无尽的期望",其中"a good deal"为"大量"之意。
3. sustain [səs'tein] *vt.* 支撑
4. soothe [suːð] *v.* 抚慰
5. confess [kən'fes] *v.* 承认,坦白
6. vivid ['vivid] *adj.* 生动的,鲜明的
7. constancy ['kɔnstənsi] *n.* 不屈不挠,坚定不移



1806—1883

朱丽叶·德鲁埃 Juliette Drouet

十九世纪法国的一个女演员，美貌动人，26岁时候邂逅了30岁的作家维克多·雨果，并堕入爱河，从此与雨果风雨同舟。朱丽叶不是雨果的妻子，却胜似妻子。她救过雨果的命，救过包括《悲惨世界》在内的一大箱手稿。后世读到的许多雨果作品，都是经过朱丽叶的纤手誊抄出来的。朱丽叶追随雨果50多年，生活在天才的阴影下，给雨果写下了一万八千封情书，这可能是一个女人写给一个男人最多的情书了。

本文便是朱丽叶写给雨果的情书之一。在信中，朱丽叶表达了她对雨果的深深的爱。

朱丽叶·德鲁埃致雨果的信

我最爱的人：

请你想想我吧，好让我能够感受到你的思绪，感受到你与家人的欢乐。朋友对你的喜爱、爱慕者对你的追求为你带去的欢乐都不会使我感到嫉妒，也不会令我伤心。请你想想我吧，因为你就是我的生命和灵魂。想想我对你的那份深沉、纯洁而又专一的爱吧！我多么希望你就在我身边啊！我马上就要休息了，在就寝之前，我一定会为你和你身边的人祈祷。我相信，我的心愿一定能够实现——因为我不惜用生命去换得你和你身边人的幸福。你知道吗？得知你正在幸福地生活着，就如同得知你已深深爱上我一样。我爱你，我对你的爱已经超越了凡间的一切。今夜，就请为你的成功尽情欢乐吧！我的维克多，请为你的美丽，你的才智，以及与家人团聚而尽情欢笑吧！要是你在这欢乐的时刻没有把我忘怀，我一定会感到骄傲和幸福的！最重要的是，我不想强求，或委屈你，我只想永远地爱着你。

朱丽叶

相关链接

朱丽叶·德鲁埃是雨果的情妇。最初两人相逢时，只是一夜情的关系，但最终演变成了一段相伴50年的感情。雨果在海外流亡期间，她一直追随左右。因雨果有原配夫人，所以她不能公开与雨果交往，而她对雨果真挚的爱最终连雨果夫人都被感动了，并邀请她来家中吃饭。当她去世以后，雨果写道：这场被诋毁的爱情，曾是错误，终究变成美德。

Juliette Drouet to Victor Hugo

My Love,

Oh! Think of me, my sweet **beloved**[1], so that I may feel it and so that your joy amid your **delightful**[2] family, your kind friends and **admirers**[3] may not be changed into **bitterness**[4] and grief for me. Think of me. of whom you are the life and soul. Think of my love so profound, so pure, and so devoted, and wish I were with you. I am going to bed praying God for you and yours. I trust my prayers will not be **fruitless**[5], as I am asking for their happiness and yours, should it be at the cost of my own life. If you knew how I need to know that you are happy, my beloved, almost as much as to know I am loved by you! I love you, more than anything else in the world. Enjoy your success, this evening, my Victor, your beauty, your genius, and be happy with your delightful family. I will be proud and happy myself, provided **amid**[6] all this you do not forget me. Above all I do not wish to importune or **compromise**[7] you. I only want to love you to my last sight.

Juliette.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. beloved [bi'lʌvd] *adj.* 心爱的人，爱人
2. delightful [di'laitful] *adj.* 令人愉快的，可喜的
3. admirer [əd'maiərə(r)] *n.* 景慕者，赞赏者
4. bitterness ['bitənis] *n.* 苦味，辛酸
5. fruitless ['fruːtlis] *adj.* 不结果实的
6. amid [ə'mid] *prep.* 在……中
7. compromise ['kɔmprəmaiz] *n.* 妥协，折衷



1802—1885

维克多·雨果 Victor Hugo

法国浪漫主义文学运动的领袖，是法国文学史上最伟大的作家之一。他的一生几乎跨越整个十九世纪，他的文学生涯长达六十年之久，创作力经久不衰。他的浪漫主义小说精彩动人，雄浑有力，对读者具有永久的魅力。代表作有长篇小说《悲惨世界》、《巴黎圣母院》等。

阿黛勒·福契是雨果的妻子，两人是青梅竹马的恋人，并不顾家人的反对，于1822年结为夫妇。阿黛勒为雨果生了五个孩子，两人共同生活了一辈子，直至1868年阿黛勒去世。

雨果致阿黛勒·福契的信

1

亲爱的阿黛勒：

你简单的几句话就调整了我的心情。是的，你对我起着至关重要的作用。明天，如果你那甜美的声音和温柔的嘴唇仍无法使我复苏，恐怕我真的要告别人世了。今晚，我躺下来时的心情与昨晚有着多么大的不同啊！阿黛勒，昨天，我已知道你不再爱我，因此，对我而言，死神的来临正是我求之不得的。

于是，我便对自己说，如果她真的不爱我了，如果我身上再没有她值得眷恋的地方，如果我从此失去了她的爱，那么余生将索然无味。难道我将因此而死去吗？我活着难道只是为了追求个人的幸福吗？不！不论她爱不爱我，我都将把此生献给她。我有什么权利要求她爱我？难道我能胜过天使和神吗？我爱她，不错，即便永无回报，我也甘愿为她牺牲一切，甚至放弃让她爱我的希望。为了她的一个微笑，为了她的一次回眸，我情愿为她做任何事。可我还有选择吗？我活着不就是为了爱她吗？就算她对我漠不关心，甚至恨我，也只能是我的不幸，仅此而已。只要她能够得到幸福，又有什么关系呢？是的，如果她无法爱我，我只会责备自己。我的责任就是追随着她，用我的生命去保护她；甘愿成为她抵挡一切危险的屏障；我愿把头颅献给她做垫脚石；我情愿让自己

的思想在她和痛苦间徘徊，我不求奖赏，不求回报。如果她能够在享受幸福的时候，偶尔对她的奴隶投来一丝怜悯的目光，在她有需要的时候能够记得他，那就是他最大的幸福！如果她能够让我为她实现每一个愿望，哪怕是荒诞的想法让我付出生命的代价；如果她允许我满怀崇敬之心吻遍她的足迹；如果她愿意在生活最艰难的时候依靠我，我便得到了我所期望的幸福——唯一的幸福！因为我甘愿为她付出一切。她需要感谢我吗？我爱她是她的错吗？难道只因为我爱她，她就必须爱我？不，也许她会玩弄我的感情，也许她会以怨报德，对我的崇拜之情不屑一顾，但我却没有权利对我的天使做出任何抱怨。尽管被投以轻蔑的目光，我也不会停止对她的颂扬。即便让我每天都为她做出牺牲，我也将义不容辞，也许直到生命的尽头，我也无法还清那数不清的债，因为正是她的存在，才使我得以存活。

我亲爱的阿黛勒，昨夜的这个时候，这些思绪便萦绕在我的脑中，今夜依然如此。唯一不同的是，今天的思想中又多了一种幸福的信念——这种无法形容的喜悦甚至让我有些颤抖，这简直令我难以置信。

你是爱我的，对吗，阿黛勒？请告诉我吧，我是否可以相信这令人陶醉的消息？倘若我有幸用一生的时间来照顾你，让你和我一样幸福，并使你对我的爱得以升华——如同我对你的爱一般浓厚。难道你不认为我会高兴得发疯吗？啊，你的来信，使我在幸福中得以平静下来。我想无数次地感谢你，阿黛勒，我最心爱的天使，但愿我能像匍匐在神像前的人那样，拜倒在你脚下。你给了我多么大的幸福啊！再见，晚安，我将与你在梦中相会！

好好睡吧，允许你的丈夫得到你曾承诺的十二个吻，当然，还要加上你以后将许诺的。

永远忠实于你的

维克多·雨果

1820年1月

2

亲爱的：

当两颗灵魂在人海中久久寻觅，最终相遇时……彼此结合，炽热而纯粹……生于尘世，续于天堂。

这种结合就是爱，是真爱……是宗教，愿把爱人奉为神，就算为彼此献出

生命也毫无怨言。

是你点燃了我心中的爱……你的灵魂因爱而生，犹如天使般纯洁而富有激情；可是，也许你只会爱恋另一个天使，对此，我将感到不寒而栗。

维克多·雨果

1821年

3

经过昨天和前天两个愉快的夜晚之后，今晚我自然不会出去，我已决定在家里给你写信。除此之外，我亲爱的阿黛勒，我可爱的、令我着迷的阿黛勒，我有多少话要对你讲啊！哦，上帝！两天来，我时时刻刻都在问自己，这种幸福会不会只是个梦？我的快乐似乎不应存于人世间。我不懂得这一切，就像我不懂得为何天空万里无云一样。

阿黛勒，也许你还不知道当初那个听天由命的我呢。唉！我是否真正了解自己呢？——我是一个脆弱的人，所以我特别喜欢平静的生活；我甚至打算在自己走投无路时做出一些荒唐事来。即便如此，我依然觉得自己是勇敢的，甚至可以做到随遇而安。

哦！让我拜倒在你的脚下吧！你那么高贵、那么温柔，那么坚强！

当我爱你到极点时，只能把自己的生命献给你——我原本以为，这只是我一厢情愿的想法，没想到，我慷慨的爱人竟也准备为了我而放弃原本平静的生活。

上苍赐予了你一切，包括坚强与泪水。

哦，阿黛勒！不要以为我是因激情冲昏了头脑才说出这些话——我对你的激情一生都不会熄灭，随着岁月的流逝，只会一天天更加强烈。因为，我的灵魂早已属于你。

如果我的存在不是为了你，那么我的生命将失去意义，我一定会选择死亡——是的，我将义无反顾……

如果你爱我，那么你一定知道怎样才能使我快乐。也许你能够猜到我的心思，我不想在此描述了。

我的阿黛勒，为何我此时只能用“喜悦”这个词来形容我的心情呢？是否人类的语言已无法表达这种幸福感呢？

当我突然间从悲哀中得以解脱，得到无尽的幸福之时，我的内心竟如此

忐忑不安。直到现在我还有些不知所措，有时，我甚至会浑身发抖，唯恐从这个甜美的梦中醒来。

哦，现在，你已属于我！终于只属于我了！很快——也许只需几个月，我的天使就会在我的臂弯里睡去、醒来，永远不离开。

无论何时，你的思绪里只有我，你的眼里也只有我；我的思绪里只有你，我的眼里也只有你！

我的阿黛勒！

阿黛勒，我的天使，我的至爱！阿黛勒！

真想吻了你的秀发后，再睡去。

虽然你不在我身边，我却可以在梦中寻你。

也许，不久之后，你就可以陪在我身边了。

阿黛勒，原谅今生来世都会拥抱你、爱你的丈夫所说的这些略显癫狂的话吧！

维克多·雨果

1822年3月15日 星期五晚

Victor Hugo to Adele Foucher

1

Jan.1820

My beloved Adele,

A few words from you have again changed the state of my mind. Yes, you can do anything with me, and tommorrow, I should be dead indeed if the gentle sounds of your voice, the tender pressure of your **adored**[4] lips, do not suffice to recall the life to my body. With what different feelings to yesterday's I shall lay myself down tonight! Yesterday, Adele, I no longer believe in your love;the hour of death would have been welcome to me.

And yet I still said to myself, if it is true that she does not love me, if nothing in me could deserve the blessing of her love, without which there is no longer any charm in life, is that a reason for dying? Do I exist for my own personal happiness? No, my whole existence is devoted to her, even in spite of her. And by what right should I have dared to aspire to her love? Am I then, more than an angel or a deity? I love her, true, even shouldn't I am ready to sacrifice everything gladly for her sake-everything,

even the hope of being loved by her; there is no devotedness of which I am not capable for her, for none of her smiles, for one of her looks. But could I do otherwise? Is she not the sole aim of my life? That she may show indifference to me, even hate me, will be my misfortune, that is all. What does it matter, so that it does not injure her happiness? Yes, if she cannot love me I ought to blame myself only. My duty is to keep close to her steps, to surround her existence with mine, to serve her as a barrier against all dangers, to offer her my head as a stepping-stone, to place myself unceasingly between her and all sorrows, without claiming reward, without expecting **recompense**[5]. Only too happy if she designs some times to casta pitying look upon her slave, and to remember him in the hour of danger! Alas! If she only allow me to give my life to anticipate her every desire, all her caprices; if she but permit to kiss with respect her adored foorprints; if she but consent to learn upon me at times amidst the difficulties of life, then I shall have obtained the only happiness to which I have the presumption to aspire. Because I am ready to sacrifice all for her, does she owe me gratitude? Is it her fault that I love her? Must she, on that account, believe herself constrained to love me? No! She may sport with my devotions, repay my services with hate, and repulse my idolatry with scorn, without my having for a moment the right to complain of that angel, nor ought I to cease for an instant to lavish upon her all that which she would **disdain**[6]. And should every one of my days have been marked by some sacrifice for her, I should still, at the day of my death have **discharged**[7] nothing of the **infinite**[8] debt that my existence owes to her.

Such, my beloved Adele, were the thoughts and resolutions of my mind at this time yesterday. Today they are still the same. Only there is mingled with them the certainty of happiness-such great happiness that I cannot think of it without trembling, and scarcely dare to believe in it.

Then it is true that you love me, Adele? Tell me, can I trust in this **enchanting**[9] idea? Don't you think that I shall end by becoming **insane**[10] with joy if ever I can pass the whole of my life at your feet, sure of making you as happy as I shall be myself, sure of being adored by you as you are adored by me? Oh! Your letter has restored peace to me with happiness. A thousand thanks, Adele, my well beloved angel. Would that I could prostrate myself before you as before a divinity. How happy you make me! Adieu, adieu, I shall pass a very happy night dreaming of you.

Sleep well, and allow your husband to take the twelve kisses which you promised him besides all those yet unpromises.

Yours affectionately
Victor Hugo.

2

1821.

My dearest,

When two souls, which have sought each other for, however long in the **throng**[1], have finally found each other … a **union**[2], **fiery**[3] and pure as they themselves are … begins on earth and continues forever in heaven.

This union is love, true love, … a religion, which deifies the loved one, whose life comes from devotion and passion, and for which the greatest sacrifices are the sweetest delights.

This is the love which you inspire in me … Your soul is made to love with the purity and passion of angels; but perhaps it can only love another angel, in which case I must tremble with apprehension.

Yours forever
Victor Hugo.

3

Friday evening, March 15, 1822.

After the two delightful evenings spent yesterday and the day before, I shall certainly not go out tonight, but will sit here at home and write to you. Besides, my Adele, my **adorable**[11] and adored Adele, what have I not to tell you? O, God! for two days, I have been asking myself every moment if such happiness is not a dream. It seems to me that what I feel is not of earth. I cannot yet comprehend this cloudless heaven.

You do not yet know, Adele, to what I had resigned myself. Alas, do I know it myself?

Because I was weak, I fancied I was calm; because I was preparing myself for all the mad follies of despair, I thought I was courageous and resigned.

Ah! let me cast myself humbly at your feet, you who are so grand, so tender and strong!

I had been thinking that the utmost limit of my devotion could only be the sacrifice of my life; but you, my generous love, were ready to sacrifice for me the repose of yours.

You have been privileged to receive every gift from nature, you have both fortitude and tears.

Oh, Adele, do not mistake these words for blind enthusiasm-enthusiasm for you

has lasted all my life, and increased day by day.My whole soul is yours.

If my entire existence had not been yours, the harmony of my being would have been lost, and I must have died — died inevitably.

If you love me, you know what must have been my joy. What I know you may have felt, I will not describe.

My Adele, why is there no word for this but joy? Is it because there is no power in human speech to express such happiness?

The sudden bound from mournful resignation to infinite felicity seemed to upset me. Even now I am still beside myself and sometimes I tremble lest I should suddenly awaken from this dream divine.

Oh, now you are mine! At last you are mine! Soon — in a few months, perhaps, my angel will sleep in my arms, will awaken in my arms, will live there.

All your thoughts at all moments, all your looks will be for me; all my thoughts, all my moments, all my looks, will be for you!

My Adele!

Adieu, my angel, my beloved Adele! Adieu!

I will kiss your hair and go to bed.

Still I am far from you, but I can dream of you.

Soon perhaps you will be at my side.

Adieu; pardon the delirium of your husband who embraces you, and who adores you, both for this life and another.

Victor Hugo.

热词空间 Hot Word Space



1. throng [θrɔŋ] *v.* 群集
2. union ['juːnjən] *n.* 结合
3. fiery ['faiəri] *adj.* 炽热的
4. adore [ə'dɔː] *v.* 崇拜，喜爱
5. recompense ['rekəmpəns] *v.* 报偿
6. disdain [dis'dein] *n.* 轻蔑
7. discharge [dis'tʃɑːdʒ] *vt.* 卸下，履行
8. infinite ['infinit] *adj.* 无限的，无数的
9. enchant [in'tʃɑːnt] *vt.* 施魔法，使迷惑
10. insane [in'sein] *adj.* 患精神病的
11. adorable [ə'dɔːrəbl] *adj.* 可爱的



1858—1884

玛丽·巴什科采夫 Marie Bashkirtseff

俄罗斯日记作家、画家、雕刻家。她的绝大部分作品都在二战中毁于纳粹之手，流传于世的作品中最有代表性的是两幅画作《集会》和《画室》。1884年，年仅二十六岁的巴什科采夫死于肺结核。巴什科采夫生前一直保持与法国著名作家莫泊桑通信，这些信于1891年被整理出版。

这是巴什科采夫化名为"哈斯叮"小姐给当时在法国文坛崭露头角的作家莫泊桑写的信，从信中可以看出她对莫泊桑的崇拜和尊敬。

玛丽·巴什科采夫致莫泊桑的信

先生：

可以说我几乎是怀着喜悦的心情拜读了你的作品。你以宗教式的真诚描写了真实的人性，你真的有一种令人崇拜的灵感；同时读者还被你作品中浓厚的人情味所打动，我们仿佛在字里行间看到了自己的影子，从而产生一种发自内心的爱。难道这是一种毫无意义的恭维吗？请不要怀疑，这真的是肺腑之言。

你知道，我很想对你说许多美丽动听的话，但要突然就这样讲出来，实在有些为难。我对此感到更加遗憾，因为你如此出色，会使人产生许多浪漫的幻想，希望能够成为你的知己，我一直认为你的心灵非常美丽。

如果你没有美丽的心灵，如果"你不擅长那些事情"，那么，首先，我将对此感到遗憾；其次，在我的心目中，你将只是一个文学创作者，然后，我会把这件事情忘得一干二净。

这一年以来，我一直都有给你写信的愿望，而且许多次都已提起笔来，但有时我又认为我夸大了你的才华，这样做不值得。可是，两天前，我突然在《高卢人报》上看到有人写了一封称赞你的恭维信，而你想得到这个好心人的地址，以便给他回信；我立刻产生了嫉妒之心，你的文学才华再次令我心醉神迷，于是我就写了这封信。

现在我要告诉你的是，我将永远不会让你知道我的名字，我甚至不想在

远处看你一眼——你的容貌可能会令我失望——谁知道呢？现在我所知道的是，你很年轻，并且没有结婚，对一个遥远的崇拜者来说，这两点已经足够了。

可我必须告诉你的是，我很迷人，这个美好的感觉将促使你给我回信。换成是我，如果我是个男人的话，是不会愿意同一个丑陋的英国老太婆保持联系的，即使是通过书信。我可不管她会作何感想。

哈斯叮

Marie Bashkirtseff to Guy de Maupassant

Monsieur,

I read your works, I might almost say, with delight. In truth to nature, which you copy with religious fidelity, you find an inspiration that is truly sublime, while you move your readers by touches of feeling so profoundly human, that we fancy we see ourselves depicted in your pages, and love you with an egotistical love. Is this an unmeaning compliment? Be indulgent, it is sincere in the main.

You will understand that I should like to say many fine and striking things to you, but it is rather difficult, all at once, in this way. I regret this all the more as you are sufficiently great to inspire one with romantic dreams of becoming the confidante of your beautiful soul, always supposing your soul to be beautiful.

If your soul is not beautiful, and if "those things are not in your line," I shall regret it for your sake, in the first place; and in the next I shall set you down in my mind as a maker of literature, and dismiss the matter from my thoughts.

For a year past I have had the wish to write to you and was many times on the point of doing so, but sometimes I thought I exaggerated your merits and that it was not worthwhile. Two days ago, however, I saw suddenly, in the Gaulois, that someone had honored you with a flattering epistle and that you had inquired the address of this amiable person in order to answer him. I at once became jealous, your literary merits dazzled me anew and here is my letter.

And now let me say that I shall always preserve my incognito for you. I do not even desire to see you from a distance — your countenance might not please me — who can tell? All I know of you now is that you are young and that you are not married, two essential points, even for a distant adoration.

But I must tell you that I am charming; this sweet reflection will stimulate you to answer my letter. It seems to me that if I were a man I should wish to hold no communication, not even an epistolary one, with an old fright of an Englishwoman, whatever might be thought by.



莫泊桑致玛丽·巴什科采夫的信

作者简介 1850—1893

居伊·德·莫泊桑

Guy de Maupassant

法国十九世纪最杰出的批判现实主义作家之一。他出生于一个没落贵族之家，后在福楼拜的亲自指导下学习写作。1880年，莫泊桑以《羊脂球》在法国文坛崭露头角，在其后的十年中创作了六部长篇小说和三百多篇中短篇小说。其文学成就以短篇小说最为突出，被誉为"短篇小说之王"。他的作品布局精巧，文笔自然，有如行云流水，对后世产生了极大影响。主要代表作有长篇小说《像死一般坚强》、《俊友》，短篇小说《项链》、《我的叔叔于勒》等。

莫泊桑从大量读者来信中看到一封署名"哈斯叮小姐"的来信，他对这位神秘的俄国姑娘产生了兴趣。两人经过一段时间的通信，在保持距离的前提下彼此交往，形成一种动人的精神恋爱，平添了一般交往所不具备的爱情魅力。

女士：

我这封信并非如你所愿。首先，我要感谢你对我的一番好意和赞美之辞。现在，让我们理智地谈谈吧。

你凭什么要求成为我的知己？我并不认识你。我为什么要对一个陌生人——一个在思想、性格等方面可能与我完全不同的人——说那些在公共场合或私下里对异性朋友说的话呢？那不是一个傻瓜或不忠于朋友的人所做的事吗？

这种神秘的通信方式会对彼此之间的关系增加什么魅力吗？男女之间的纯洁爱情的甜蜜难道不都是来自于彼此相会、交谈以及想念的喜悦吗？这样，在给朋友的信中，她的形象才会跃然纸上。一个人怎能连对方的体形、头发的颜色和音容笑貌都不了解，就向对方倾诉自己内心深处的隐私呢？

你提到了我最近收到的那封信，那是一个向我求教的男人写来的。现在让我们回到陌生女人来信的话题上来。在过去的两年之中，我已经收到了五六十封来信，照你的意思，我该如何从这些信中挑选我的知己呢？

如果她们愿意与我见面，并在互相尊重的

情形下了解对方，是可以建立一种友好而亲密的关系的。否则，我为什么要忽视那些可爱的朋友，而去结识一个或许可爱、但却不了解的朋友呢？确切地说，或许她的容貌和智力都不讨人喜欢。这些话并不怎么中听，是吧？可就算我拜倒在你的脚下，你就能相信我在道德和爱情方面都对你忠诚吗？

抱歉，女士，与其说我是一个富有诗意的人，不如说我是一个讲求实际的人，但请相信我仍是感激并尊敬你的居伊·德·莫泊桑。

附：请原谅我在信中所做的涂改，我写信时总是喜欢涂改，但又没有时间重新抄写。

相关链接

"天才，无非是长久地忍耐！努力吧！"这是福楼拜写给莫泊桑的赠言。这两位法国大作家的友谊是极深的，在莫泊桑的成名之路上凝聚了他的老师福楼拜的一番心血。这句赠言富含哲理，很有启迪意义。天才，靠的是你不断地奋斗；成就，离不开你付出的汗水。在文学创作的道路上，更是如此。福楼拜是深悟创作之艰辛的，因此，他以此来激励、告诫莫泊桑。

Guy de Maupassant to Marie Bashkirtseff

Madame,

my letter surely will not be what you expected. At the **outset**[1] I want to thank you for your kindness to me and for your **compliments**[2]. Now let us talk like sensible people.

You ask to become my **confidante**[3]. By what right? I do not know you. Why should I tell you — a person unknown, whose mind, **temperament**[4], and so on, may not be **in tune**[5] with the quality of my intellect — what perhaps I would tell, aloud and intimately, to the women who are my friends? Wouldn't that be the conduct of an idiot, of an **unfaithful**[6] friend?

What charm can mysterious correspondence add to relationships? Does not all the sweetness of affection — chaste affection — between man and woman come from the

most part, from the joy of meeting, of speaking to one another, and of **visualizing**[7], in letters to one's friend, her face **depicted**[8] between one's eyes and the paper? How could one transcribe the intimacies of one's **innermost**[9] being and address them to one whose figure, the color of whose hair, whose smile and aspect, one is **unacquainted**[10] with?

You allude to one letter which I received recently. It was from a man who asked my advice. Now look. To return to letters from unknown women. In the last two years, I have received in the neighborhood of fifty or sixty. How am I to choose from these women the confidante of my soul, as you put it?

When they are willing to reveal themselves and become acquainted as in the world of respectable society, then a relationship of friendliness and confidence can be established; otherwise, why should I neglect the charming friends I know for a friend who may be charming, but is unknown; that is to say, who may be disagreeable, both visually and intellectually? All this is not very gallant, is it? But if I throw myself at your feet, could you believe me faithful in my moral affections?

Pardon, Madame, the reasoning of a man more practical than **poetical**[11], and believe me to be your grateful and devoted Guy de Maupassant.

P.S. Pardon the **erasures**[12] in my letter. I cannot write without making them and have no time to recopy.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. outset ['autset] *n.* 开端，开始
2. compliment ['kɔmplimənt] *n.* 称赞
3. confidante [ˌkɔnfi'dænt] *n.* 知已的女友
4. temperament ['tempərəmənt] *n.* 气质，性情
5. in tune 合调，合拍
6. unfaithful ['ʌn'feiθful] *adj.* 不诚实的
7. visualizing ['vizjuəlaiziŋ] *n.* 肉眼观察
8. depict [di'pikt] *vt.* 描述，描写
9. innermost ['inəməust] *adj.* 最里面的，内心的，秘密的
10. acquaint [ə'kweint] *vt.* 使熟知，通知
11. poetical [pəu'etikəl] *adj.* 诗的，理想化的
12. erasure [i'reiʒə] *n.* 擦掉



拿破仑致约瑟芬的信

作者简介 1769—1821

拿破仑·波拿巴

Napoleon Bonaparte

法兰西第一帝国皇帝、军事家、统帅。出生于法国科西嘉岛，年青时的拿破仑是一位民族主义者，认为法国人是压迫者，但是他却被派遣到法国军事院校学习。1785年，年仅十六岁的他，就开始在军队当少尉，之后又在一系列重大战役中取得辉煌战绩，从此青云直上。1804年，拿破仑即皇帝位。1815年滑铁卢战役失败后，法兰西第一帝国从此一蹶不振，拿破仑本人也被流放于圣赫拿岛，并最终病死于岛上。

拿破仑与约瑟芬于1796年3月结婚。当时拿破仑只是个籍籍无名的小军官，而约瑟芬是个风情万种的寡妇。后来拿破仑发现她浅薄轻浮，对她的炽热感情有所冷却，但仍然保持着关怀的情意，并不断给她写信。1804年拿破仑在巴黎登基为帝，同年12月1日与约瑟芬再行婚礼。

1

我已收到了你的信，我的心上人。它令我的内心充满了欢乐……自从与你分别之后，我一直郁郁寡欢。我唯一的幸福就是陪伴在你身边。你的吻、你的泪水和你的嫉妒都令我回味无穷。迷人的约瑟芬啊，你的魅力像一团炽热的火在心里燃烧。我何时才能陪伴你度过每分每秒啊？——除了爱你什么也不必做；除了向你倾诉我对你的爱，并向你证明这样的爱多么令人幸福，什么也不必想。不久前我爱上了你，如今对你的爱已增至千倍。自从与你相识以来，我越来越崇拜你。这恰好证明了La Bruyere所说“爱，转瞬即逝”是多么不切合实际。唉，让我来说说你身上的不足吧：少几分美丽吧，少几分温柔吧，少几分善良吧。可是，千万不要怀疑我对你的爱，更不要流泪。你的泪会令我不知所措……会令我热血沸腾。相信我，我无时无刻不在思念你，所有的意念都顺从你的意愿。好好休息，祝你早日康复。希望你能够再次回到我身边，这样，当我们离开这个世界之时，至少可以说：“我们曾共同度过多少个幸福的日子啊！”送你无数

个吻，也为你的小狗带去几个吻吧。

2

我一点也不爱你，相反，我讨厌你。你是一个淘气、笨拙，而又愚蠢的灰姑娘。你从来不给我写信，你根本不爱你的丈夫；你明明知道你的信会给你的丈夫带去多么大的欢乐，可你却连六行字都没有写过，即使偶尔写了，也只不过是敷衍了事。

我的夫人，你整天都在干什么？到底是什么重要的事情使你连给挚爱的人写封信的时间都没有？是什么使你把曾许诺给我的温情排挤到一旁？那个神奇的人！你的新情人究竟是个什么样的人物，竟然可以将你一整天的时间都占用了，甚至使你没有一点时间去关心你的丈夫？约瑟芬，小心一点，说不定哪天晚上我会破门而入。

我的爱人，没有你的消息令我深感不安，快给我写几页信吧——几页充满了甜言蜜语的信，能够让我重新感受到那无尽的快乐。真希望不久之后就可以把你拥在怀里，在你全身印满百万个炽热的吻。

拿破仑·波拿巴
1796年11月13日于维罗纳

Napoleon Bonaparte to Josephine

1

I have your letter, my adorable love. It has filled my heart with joy … since I left you I have been sad all the time. My only happiness is near you. I go over endlessly in my thought of your kisses, your tears, your delicious **jealousy**[1]. The charm of my wonderful Josephine kindles a living, **blazing**[2] fire in — my heart and senses. When shall I be able to pass every minute near you, with nothing to do but to love you and nothing to think of but the pleasure of telling you of it and giving you proof of it? I loved you some time ago; since then I feel that I love you a thousand times better. Ever since I have known you I adore you more every day. That proves how wrong is that saying of La Bruyere "Love comes all of a sudden." Ah, let me see some of your

faults; be less beautiful, less graceful, less tender, less good. But never be jealous and never shed tears. Your tears send me out of my mind … they set my very blood on fire. Believe me that it is utterly impossible for me to have a single thought that is not yours, a single fancy that is not **submissive**[3] to your will. Rest well. Restore your health. Come back to me and then at any rate before we die we ought to be able to say: "We were happy for so very many days! " Millions of kisses even to your dog.

2

Verona,
November 13th, 1796.

I don't love you, not at all; **on the contrary**[4], I detest you. You're a **naught**[5], **gawky**[6], foolish Cinderella. You never write me; you don't love your own husband; you know what pleasures your letters give him, and yet you haven't written him six lines, dashed of so **casually**[7]!

What do you do all day, Madam? What is the affair so important as to leave you no time to write to your devoted lover? What affection stifles and puts to one side the love, the tender constant love you promised him? Of what sort can be that marvelous being, that new lover that **tyrannizes**[8] over your days, and prevents your giving any attention to your husband? Josephine, take care! Some fine night, the doors will be broken open and there I'll be.

Indeed, I am very uneasy, my love, at receiving no news of you; write me quickly for pages, pages full of agreeable things which shall fill my heart with the pleasantest feelings. I hope before long to crush you in my arms and cover you with a million kisses as though beneath the equator.

Napoleon Bonaparte.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. jealousy [ˈdʒeləsi] *n.* 嫉妒
2. blazing [ˈbleiziŋ] *adj.* 炽热的，燃烧的
3. submissive [səbˈmisiv] *adj.* 顺从的
4. on the contrary 相反
5. naught [ˈnɔːt] *n.* 零
6. gawky [ˈgɔːki] *adj.* 迟钝的，笨拙的
7. casual [ˈkæʒjuəl] *adj.* 偶然的，不经意的
8. tyrannize [ˈtirənaiz] *vi.* 施行暴政





巴尔扎克致汉斯卡夫人的信

作者简介 1799—1850

巴尔扎克

Balzac

法国十九世纪伟大的批判现实主义作家、欧洲批判现实主义文学的奠基人和杰出代表。他一生创作了九十六部长、中、短篇小说和随笔，总名为《人间喜剧》。巴尔扎克在艺术上的巨大成就表现在小说结构的匠心独运及多样化上。他善于将集中概括与精确描摹相结合，以外形反映内心本质等手法来塑造人物，他还善于以精细入微、生动逼真的环境描写再现时代风貌。100多年来，他的作品传遍了全世界，对世界文学的发展和人类进步产生了巨大的影响。马克思、恩格斯称赞他是“超群的小说家”、“现实主义大师”。其代表作有长篇小说《欧也妮·葛朗台》、《高老头》等。

下面这封信是巴尔扎克写给他最忠实的读者、也是亲密无间的朋友的一封信，从信中可以看出相互之间的爱慕之情。

1

我希望你能把我个人与我作家的身份分开来看，事实上，我是一个极普通的人，并请你相信，我对你的感情是真挚的。想起你，我便忍不住要提笔给你写信。可是，我对你的这种朦胧的情感甚至连我自己也说不清楚。如果你能够原谅一个年轻人的荒唐梦想，我必须向你坦白，你就是我最甜美的梦。我欣喜地认为自己遇到了一位在世界上难得一见的一种人，一种寥寥无几、身世坎坷的人。或许，你是从天堂上被放逐到人间……诗歌、音乐和宗教信仰几乎成了这类人的精神依托。每位神都在他们心中唤起了一种强烈的情感。因此，我便将这些信念呈现在你面前。我从远方向你伸出友爱之手，不带有一丝浮华的气息，也没有愚昧的伤感，而是带着一种与生俱来的自信和执着。如果你凝视我的脸，你也许会同时看到爱慕者的感激之情和虔诚之心——一种把儿子和母亲、兄弟和姐妹系在一起的真情；一个年轻男子对一位女子的无尚崇敬和对甜蜜友谊的期待之情。

2

我的天使：

为了你，我几近疯狂：如果你谈及的两件事之中有一件事与你无关，那么我就很难将这两件事联系到一起。

除了你，我的思想里容不下其他任何东西。我的思绪一直追随着你，甚至已经忽略了自己。我想紧紧地搂着你，吻你，爱抚着你——无数个深情而热烈的吻已占据了我的心。

是的，我的心时时刻刻都被你占据着——那会给我一种美妙的感受。可是，上帝啊！如果你带走了我的理智，我将变成什么样呢？清晨，这种狂热的情绪常常令我感到极为不安。

每当我醒来时，我都要对自己说："我就要去那儿了！"说到这儿，我又会重新坐在床上，恢复了理智。我的内心在不断地挣扎，这不是真正的生活。我以前从未像现在这样，你已经带走了我的一切。

每当我想你时，幸福感便会涌上心头，同时，我会觉得自己十分愚蠢。我让自己沉浸在一个美梦之中，仿佛沉醉了千年。这是一种多么可怕的境遇啊！

我被爱情所征服，每一种感受都浸透着爱情的滋味，为了爱而生存，因忧伤而消耗着生命，就像被无数只蜘蛛困住一般。

哦，我亲爱的埃维莉，你根本无法体会这一切。我对着你的相片说话，假装你就在身边。我看到了你，就像昨天一样，如此美丽——无与伦比的美丽。

昨天，整个晚上我都在对自己说："她只属于我！"啊！恐怕连天使也不会像我昨日那般快乐。

巴尔扎克

1836年6月19日 星期日

相关链接

汉斯卡夫人是波兰望族，会多国语言，嫁给了一个富有的庄园主。她爱好文学，在那个憋闷的家里，她靠看巴黎文学期刊挣扎活下去。在读了巴尔扎克的作品之后，便署名"外国女人"给他写信，向他表达她的景仰之情。两人书信交往达十数年，汉斯卡夫人在金钱上给予巴尔扎克很大帮助。1850年，在巴尔扎克去世的前几个月，二人结为夫妇。

Honore de Balzac to Madame Evelina Hanska

1

I **entreat**[1] you to separate the author entirely from the man and to believe in the **sincerity**[2] of the sentiments which I have had to express **vaguely**[3] in the correspondence you have obliged me to carry on with you. If you are kind enough to excuse the folly of a youthful heart and of an imagination quite **unsullied**[4], I will confess to you that you have been to me the object of the sweetest dreams, it pleases me to include you **amongst**[5] the remains, nearly always unfortunate, of a scattered people, a people found only here and there on earth. Perhaps exiled form Heaven-Poetry, music ,and religion are their three **divinities**[6], their dominating passions, each of which awakens in their hearts equally powerful sensations. So I have clothed you with all these ideas, and have stretched forth my hand to you fraternally from afar, without **foppishness**[7] as well as without sentimental foolery, but with a confidence, almost domestic, with **conscientiousness**[8]; and if you had only gazed upon my face, you might have traced there at the same time the lover's gratitude and the heart's religion — the true tenderness that binds the son to the mother and the brother to the sister, all the respect of young man for woman and the delightful anticipation of a long and fervent friendship.

2

Sunday 19th June 1836.

My beloved angel,

I am nearly mad about you, as much as one can be mad: I cannot bring together two ideas that you do not **interpose**[9] yourself between them.

I can no longer think of anything but you. In spite of myself, my imagination carries me to you. I grasp you, I kiss you, I caress you, a thousand of the most amorous caresses take possession of me.

As for my heart, there you will always be — very much so. I have a delicious sense of you there. But my God, what is to become of me, if you have deprived me of my reason? This is a **monomania**[10] which, this morning, terrifies me.

I rise up every moment saying to myself, "Come, I am going there! " Then I sit down again, moved by the sense of my obligations. There is a frightful **conflict**[11]. This is not life. I have never before been like that. You have devoured everything.

I feel foolish and happy as soon as I think of you. I whirl round in a delicious dream in which in one instant I live a thousand years. What a horrible situation!

Overcome with love, feeling love in every pore, living only for love, and seeing oneself **consumed**[12] by griefs, and caught in a thousand spiders' threads.

O, my darling Eva, you did not know it. I picked up your card. It is there before me, and I talk to you as if you were there. I see you, as I did yesterday, beautiful, astonishingly beautiful.

Yesterday, during the whole evening, I said to myself "she is mine! " Ah! The angels are not as happy in **Paradise**[13] as I was yesterday!

Balzac.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. entreat [in'triːt] *v.* 恳求
2. sincerity [sin'seriti] *n.* 诚挚，真挚
3. vaguely ['veigli] *adv.* 含糊地，暧昧地
4. unsullied ['ʌn'sʌlid] *adj.* 无污点的，清白的
5. amongst [ə'mʌŋst] *prep.* 在……中
6. divinity [di'viniti] *n.* 神
7. foppish ['fɔpiʃ] *adj.* 浮华的，有纨绔习气的
8. conscientious [ˌkɔnʃi'enʃəs] *adj.* 尽责的
9. interpose [ˌintə(ː)'pəuz] *v.* 提出
10. monomania [ˌmɔnəu'meinjə] *n.* 对一事的狂热，偏执狂
11. conflict ['kɔnflikt] *n.* 斗争，冲突
12. consum [kən'sjuːməbl] *vt.* 消耗 *vi.* 消灭
13. paradise ['pærədaiz] *n.* 天堂





1821—1880

居斯塔夫·福楼拜 Gustave Flaubert

十九世纪中叶法国现实主义作家，是继巴尔扎克、司汤达之后，法国文坛的第三位杰出的现实主义小说家。福楼拜对现实主义小说艺术的最大突破，是从作品中完全排除主观抒情成分，创立了所谓“纯客观”的艺术风格。他的作品语言精练、准确、铿锵有力，是法国文学史上的“模范散文”。他的代表作、长篇小说《包法利夫人》自面世之日起便轰动文坛，并引起社会各方面的震动，成为十九世纪批判现实主义文学的一部经典之作。

乔治·桑是法国著名女小说家。福楼拜曾与乔治·桑就作家是否应现身表达对作品的意见这一问题进行过辩论，这封信就是与此有关。

福楼拜致乔治·桑的信

亲爱的女士：

对于你所说的履行职责一说，我不能同意。但你那颗善良的心已经深深地触动了我，你的同情心更是令我感到自豪。这就是我的感受。

你的来信(注文：指1863年1月关于《萨朗波》的来信)凸显了你作品的精彩，我甚至找不到合适的词语来称赞你，我只想对你说——我非常喜欢你。

你在九月份收到的那封里面夹着一朵小花的信当然不是我寄去的。不过，令人匪夷所思的是：我也收到了类似的一封信——一封附着一片绿叶的信。

关于你热情的邀请，按照诺曼第人的习惯，我不想明确地回答你去，或不去。也许这个夏日的某一天我会给你一份惊喜——我非常想与你见面，并和你畅谈一番。

如果能在我的书房里挂上一幅你的肖像，一定是件令人愉快的事情，因为我常常独自一人在这间屋子待上几个月。不知道这个要求是否有些轻率？如果不是的话，就请让我在此向你致以无尽的谢意。

1863年

Gustave Flaubert to George Sand

1863.

Dear Madam,

I am not grateful to you for having performed what you call a **duty**.The goodness of your heart has touched me and your sympathy has made me **proud**. That is the whole of it.

Your letter which I have just received gives added value to your article (Footnote: Letter about Salammbo, January, 1863.) and goes on still further, and I do not know what to say to you unless it be that I quite frankly like you.

It was certainly not I who sent you in September, a little flower in an **envelope**[1]. But, strange to say, at the same time, I received in the same manner, a leaf of a tree.

As for your very **cordial**[2] **invitation**[3], I am not answering yes or no, in true Norman fashion. Perhaps some day this summer I shall surprise you. For I have a great desire to see you and to talk with you.

It would be very delightful to have your **portrait**[4] to **hang on**[5] the wall in my study in the country where I often spend long months entirely alone. Is the request indiscreet? If not, a thousand thanks in advance. Take them with the others which I reiterate.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. envelope ['enviləup] *n.* 信封
2. cordial ['kɔːdiəl] *adj.* 兴奋的
3. invitation [ˌinvi'teiʃən] *n.* 邀请,招待
4. portrait ['pɔːtrit] *n.* 肖像,人像
5. hang on 原意是坚持不懈,在文中指"挂"。



皮埃尔·居里致未婚妻的信

作者简介 1859—1906

皮埃尔·居里

Pierre Curie

法国物理学家、化学家，巴黎大学博士，后任该校教授。皮埃尔早期的主要成就为确定磁性物质的转变温度（居里温度），建立居里定律和发现晶体的压电现象；后与妻子居里夫人共同研究放射性现象，发现钋和镭两种天然放射性元素。因对放射性现象研究的贡献，1903年，皮埃尔与柏克勒尔、居里夫人共同荣获诺贝尔物理学奖。

居里夫人（1867—1934），原名玛丽亚·斯可罗多夫斯卡，波兰物理学家，1895年与皮埃尔·居里结为夫妇。丈夫逝世后，居里夫人继续进行放射性现象的研究，并于1911年被授予诺贝尔化学奖，成为历史上唯一一位同时拥有诺贝尔物理学奖和化学奖的科学家。

除了听到你的消息外，没有什么事情能够使我感到开心。然而两个月以来，一直没有听到你的消息，这使我的情绪曾一度跌落到极点——我一直热切地盼望着你的来信。

希望你一切顺利，十月份时可以回到我们身边。除了站在窗前，或待在花园里之外，我哪儿也不会去。

我们都曾许下诺言——难道不是吗？——只要你不改变心意，我们至少要成为彼此最好的朋友！诺言不可以被打包，更不可以订购，但它却是一种极宝贵的东西。我几乎不敢相信我们可以相伴共度今生，共同沉醉在属于我们的梦里——你那个为祖国做贡献的梦，我们为人类事业做贡献的梦，以及我们为科学事业献身的梦。

而这三个梦，恐怕唯有最后一个能够得以实现。我的意思是说，我们根本没有改变社会秩序的能力，就算我们有这种能力，也不知道该如何入手；如果我们毫无方向地展开行动，也许就会阻碍社会进程，其结果只能百害而无一利。相反，如果从科学入手，也许能够做出一番事业来；因为在这片坚实的土地上，无论我们的发现

有多么渺小，毕竟可以通过自身努力获得一些知识。

我们该怎样做呢？我们已经承诺彼此做最亲密的朋友，可是，如果你一年后就离开法国，我们之间的友情岂不是成了柏拉图式的？恐怕彼此相见无期了！如果你待在我身边不是更好吗？我知道，这个问题会让你生气，更何况你已不想再谈及这个问题——我也一样，我感觉你的想法根本没有任何实际意义。

如果我没弄错的话，你应该一直待在弗里堡，我想征求你的同意，与你在那里相见，到时，你自然会成为我的朋友。

挚爱着你的皮埃尔·居里

1894年8月10日

相关链接

皮埃尔天性超脱，讨厌虚荣，在他看来，赠给大人物的勋章和给学校里小孩子们的奖章同样无用。有一次，法国政府想颁发一枚勋章给皮埃尔，皮埃尔给巴黎科学院院长的答复如下："敬请代我向部长先生致谢，并请转告他，我不需要勋章，但我非常需要一个实验室。"对于赫赫有名的诺贝尔奖，居里夫妇竟认为教学和研究比参加授奖典礼更为重要。结果，法国驻瑞典大使代表居里夫妇领取了奖章。

Pierre Curie to His Future Wife

August 10, 1894.

Nothing could have given me greater pleasure that to get news of you. The prospect of remaining two months without hearing about you had been **extremely**[1] disagreeable to me: that is to say, your little note was more than welcome.

I hope you are laying up a stock of good air and that you will come back to us in October. As for me, I think I shall not go anywhere; I shall stay in the country, where I spend the whole day in front of my open window or in the garden.

We have promised each other — haven't we? — to be at least great friends. If you will only not change your mind! For there are no promises that are **binding**[2]; such things cannot be ordered at will. It would be a fine thing, just the same, in which

I hardly dare believe, to pass our lives near each other, **hypnotized**[3] by our dreams: your patriotic dream, our **humanitarian**[4] dream, and our scientific dream.

Of all those dreams the last is, I believe, the only **legitimate**[5] one. I mean by that that we are powerless to change the social order and, even if we were not, we should not know what to do; in taking action, no matter in what direction, we should never be sure of not doing more harm than good, by **retarding**[6] some inevitable **evolution**[7]. From the scientific point of view, on the contrary, we may hope to do something; the ground is solider here, and any discovery that we may make, however small, will remain acquired knowledge.

See how it works out: it is agreed that we shall be great friends, but if you leave France in a year it would be an altogether too **platonic**[8] friendship, that of two creatures who would never see each other again. Wouldn't it be better for you to stay with me? I know that this question angers you, and that you don't want to speak of it again — and then, too, I feel so thoroughly unworthy of you from every point of view.

I thought of asking your **permission**[9] to meet you by chance in Fribourg. But you are staying there, unless I am mistaken, only one day, and on that day you will of course belong to our friends the Kovalskis.

Believe me your very devoted
Pierre Curie.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. extremely [iks'triːmli] *adv.* 极端地，非常地
2. binding ['baindiŋ] *n.* 捆绑，打包
3. hypnotize ['hipnətaiz] *vt.* 使着迷
4. humanitarian [hju(ː),mæni'tɛəriən] *n.* 人道主义者
5. legitimate [li'dʒitimit] *adj.* 合法的，合理的
6. retard [ri'tɑːd] *vt.* 延迟，妨碍
7. evolution [ˌiːvə'luːʃən] *n.* 进展，发展
8. platonic [plə'tɔnik] *adj.* 柏拉图哲学的
9. permission [pə(ː)'miʃən] *n.* 许可，允许



蒙田致居松伯爵夫人的信

作者简介

1533—1592

蒙 田

Montaigne

法国文艺复兴后重要的人文主义作家、著名思想家、散文家,是法国启蒙运动之前的知识权威和批评家。蒙田的散文以哲学随笔为主,以丰富的思想内涵而闻名,素有"思想宝库"的美称。他的代表作《蒙田随笔》是他思想的结晶,他以一个智者的眼光,观察和思考大千世界的芸芸众生,对人类许多共有的思想感情提出了自己独到的见解,给后人留下了极其宝贵的精神财富。

居松伯爵夫人是蒙田的邻居,与蒙田过从甚密。这封信选自《蒙田随笔》,蒙田在信中与居松伯爵夫人探讨了关于如何教育孩子的一些问题,并以此作为礼物献给伯爵夫人第一个即将出世的孩子。

夫人,科学知识的确是一件华丽的装饰物,是有着奇妙用途的工具,尤其是像您这样高贵且名利双收的人。事实上,对于那些地位卑微的人而言,科学知识往往受到限制,无法发挥其真正的作用。与其说科学知识有助于逻辑推理、医药管理,还不如说它能够在控制战争、治理国家,以及与国外建立关系等方面提供帮助。夫人,相信您不会忽略对孩子的教育,因为您本人已经尝到了教育的甜蜜果实,更何况您出自书香门第——我们还藏有您的先人富瓦克斯伯爵的文稿,您与您的丈夫都是他的后人。而您的叔叔康夫达勒,日日勤学苦读、笔耕不辍,定会将您家族的优良传统发扬光大,并使之流芳百世。基于这一事实,我想向您谈一个与习俗相悖的看法,供您参考。

选择怎样的家庭教师将决定您儿子受教育的成败。家庭教师的职责涉及到许多方面,而且,必须选择一个信得过的人,但这些并不是我所要谈的——在这一约定俗成的规则上,我也没有什么更好的想法供您参考。事实上我已经对家庭教师做出了一些忠告,也许有人能够依照我的建议实施教学,那么久而久之,他一定会发现他的选择是个明智之举。

对于贵族子弟，求学并非为了谋利——这一目标极为低俗，绝不会得到缪斯女神的青睐，而且，谋利者将一切都依托在他人身上，而并非自己——也不是为了获得一些外在装饰物，而是为了他们本身能够获益，以此充实自己、丰富自己。其目的就是培养一个真正的绅士，而非一个纯粹的学者。因此，我希望您能够为孩子请一位头脑灵活的家庭教师，且在这一程度上一定要超过他自身的学识。当然，如果您能够请到头脑与学识兼备的教师更好。如果找不到，最好选择一个品行端正、判断力较强的人，而非空有满腹经纶的人。

习惯上，老师总是习惯在我们身边没完没了地向我们灌输一些东西，如同经久不息的响雷一般。而学生，就像鹦鹉学舌一样，重复他人曾经说过的话。我希望您孩子的老师能够改变这一教学方式。他首先应该从学生的兴趣入手，让孩子勤于实践，让学生自己洞悉知识的奥秘，有选择性地教学，为孩子打开一条通路，有时甚至可以让他们自行摸索着前行。我完全不赞成教师一个人去发明、去演说，他应该多听听学生的心得。苏格拉底，以及后来的阿瑟西劳都是在教学过程中让学生先说，然后才发表个人意见的。

最好让学生像一匹小马驹一样，不断跟随着前面小跑着的老师，这样一来，老师就可以根据他行进的速度来调整自己的速度，从而适应学生的能力和发展需求。不过，一旦调节不好，情况就会失控。依我之见，选择适当的速度，使师生步调和谐一致虽是上上策，却也是最难办到的事情。一个高尚而修养颇深的教师懂得如何迁就并引导孩子幼稚的需求。对我而言，爬坡时脚步一般比较稳定，也更安全……

大脑缺乏自信就无法发挥其潜能。当自己的想法被他人的意见所束缚、所支配，被他人的权威所奴役、迷惑时，我们就如同被上了枷锁，完全失去了自由与活力……

学习的益处是使我们更聪明、更完善。正如埃庇卡摩斯所说的那样，只有理解力能够看见、听到，它可以利用一切、操控一切，也可以支配并统治一切；剩下的一切都会令我们耳聋、眼盲，且没有灵魂。倘若我们没能给理解力以行动的自由，那么它就会变得怯懦而畏缩……

蒙　田

Montaigne to Comtesse de Gurson

Madame, science, is a very great **ornament**[1], and a thing of marvelous use, especially in persons raised to that degree of fortune in which you are. And, in truth, in persons of mean and low condition, it cannot perform its true and genuine office, being naturally more prompt to assist in the conduct of war, in the government of peoples, in negotiating the leagues and friendships of princes and foreign nations, than in forming a syllogism in logic, in pleading a process in law, or in prescribing a dose of pills in physic. Wherefore, madame, believing you will not omit this so necessary feature in the education of your children, who yourself have tasted its sweetness, and are of a learned extraction (for we yet have the writings of the ancient Counts of Foix, from whom my lord, your husband, and yourself, are both of you descended, and Monsieur de Candale, your uncle, every day obliges the world with others, which will extend the knowledge of this quality in your family for so many succeeding ages), I will, upon this occasion, presume to acquaint your ladyship, with one particular fancy of my own, contrary to the common method, which is all I am able to contribute to your service in this affair.

The charge of the tutor you shall provide for your son, upon the choice of whom depends the whole success of his education, has several other great and considerable parts and duties required in so important a trust, besides that of which I am about to speak: these, however, I shall not mention, as being unable to add anything of moment to the common rules: and in this, wherein I take upon me to advise, he may follow it so far only as it shall appear advisable.

For a boy of quality then, who pretends to letters not upon the account of profit (for so mean an object as that is unworthy of the grace and favor of the Muses, and moreover, in it a man directs his service to and depends upon others), nor so much for outward ornament, as for his own proper and peculiar use, and to furnish and enrich himself within, having rather a desire to come out an accomplished cavalier than a mere scholar or learned man; for such a one, I say, I would, also, have his friends solicitous to find him out a tutor, who has rather a well-made than a well-filled head; seeking, indeed, both the one and the other, but rather of the two to prefer manners and judgment to mere learning, and that this man should exercise his charge after a new method.

It is the custom of **pedagogues**[2] to be eternally thundering in their pupil's ears, as they were pouring into a funnel, while the business of the pupil is only to repeat what the others have said: now I would have a tutor to correct this error, and, that at

the very first, he should, according to the capacity he has to deal with, put it to the test, permitting his pupil himself to taste things, and of himself to discern and choose them, sometimes opening the way to him, and sometimes leaving him to open it for himself; that is, I would not have him alone to invent and speak, but that he should also hear his pupil speak in turn. Socrates, and since him Arcesilaus, made first their scholars speak, and then they spoke to them.

It is good to make him, like a young horse, trot before him that he may judge of his going and how much he is to abate of his own speed, to **accommodate**[3] himself to the **vigor**[4] and **capacity**[5] of the other. For want of which due proportion we spoil all; which also to know how to adjust, and to keep within an exact and due measure, is one of the hardest things I know, and it is the effect of a high and well-tempered soul to know how to condescend to such puerile motions and to govern and direct them. I walk firmer and more secure up hill than down

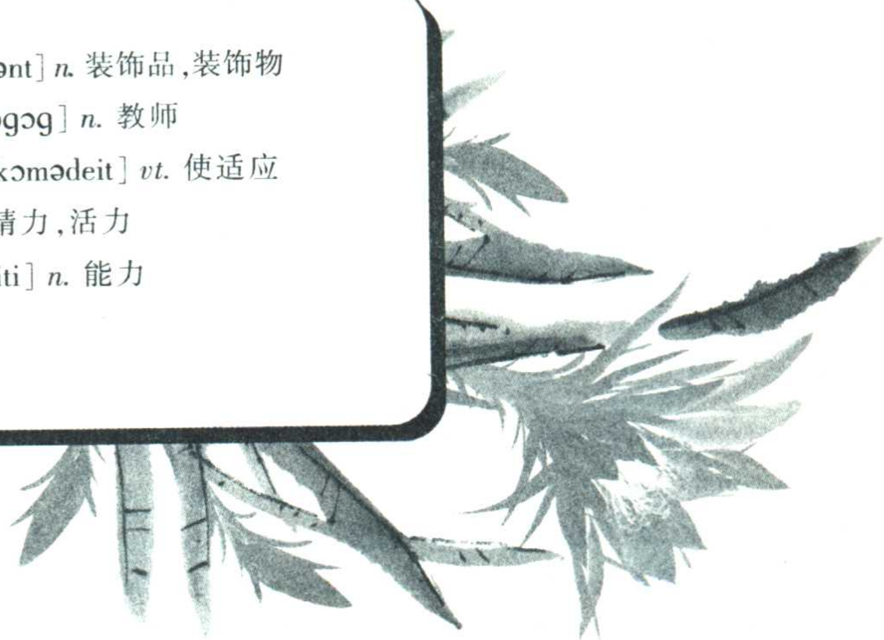
Our minds work only upon trust, when bound and compelled to follow the appetite of another's fancy, enslaved and captivated under the authority of another's instruction; we have been so subjected to the trammel, that we have no free, nor natural pace of our own; our own vigor and liberty are extinct and gone.

The advantages of our study are to become better and more wise. It is, says Epicharmus, the understanding that sees and hears, 'tis the understanding that improves everything, that orders everything, and that acts, rules, and reigns: all other faculties are blind, and deaf, and without soul. And certainly we render it timorous and servile, in not allowing it the liberty and privilege to do anything of itself …

Montaigne.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. ornament ['ɔːnəmənt] n. 装饰品,装饰物
2. pedagogue ['pedəgɔg] n. 教师
3. accommodate [ə'kɔmədeit] vt. 使适应
4. vigor ['vigə] n. 精力,活力
5. capacity [kə'pæsiti] n. 能力





1600—1634

玛丽亚·谢利斯特·伽利略

Maria Celeste Galilei

原名维吉尼亚，是伽利略奥·伽利略的长女，十三岁时被父亲送进圣·马提欧修道院，改名为玛丽亚·谢利斯特。伽利略的三个儿女之中，只有玛丽亚继承了他的聪明睿智、勤奋和感性，因此父女两人成了无所不谈的知交。

玛丽亚与父亲之间长期保持着频繁的通信，这封信是在伽利略挚爱的妹妹维吉尼亚·伽利略·兰度西去世后，玛丽亚写给父亲的安慰信。

玛丽亚·谢利斯特·伽利略致父亲的信

尊敬的父亲大人：

您最珍爱的妹妹——我们的姑妈不幸去世，大家都感到万分难过。可是，我们的哀痛远不能与您相比——您必定承受了巨大的悲痛，因为在您的世界里，那个您最珍视的人从此远去了，我们可以想象，这突如其来的打击对您而言将会多么沉重。我想对您说，我们大家将为您分担这份痛苦。事实上，我们每个人都会遭受这样的不幸——人类不过是地球上的过客，我们终将到那片真正的乐土——天堂，那里有真正属于我们的快乐，您亲爱的妹妹一定受到了这样的祝福，到天堂去了。父亲大人，如果您能这样想，也许您那颗悲痛的心就能够得到些许宽慰。因此，我们恳请您能够把一切托付给上帝，您应该清楚他对您寄予的希望；否则，您不但是在伤害自己，也同样是在伤我们的心。因为，当我们知道您背负着沉重的负担时，我们也会感到无比悲伤，只因您是这世上最令我们牵挂的人，你的苦恼，我们都能够感同身受啊！

我们真心希望上帝能够为您带去慰藉，希望能将我们强烈的爱寄予您。

挚爱着您的女儿

S·玛丽亚·谢利斯特

1623年5月10日于圣·马提欧

Maria Celeste Galilei to Galileo

San Matteo, the 10th day of May 1623.
Most Illustrious Lord Father,

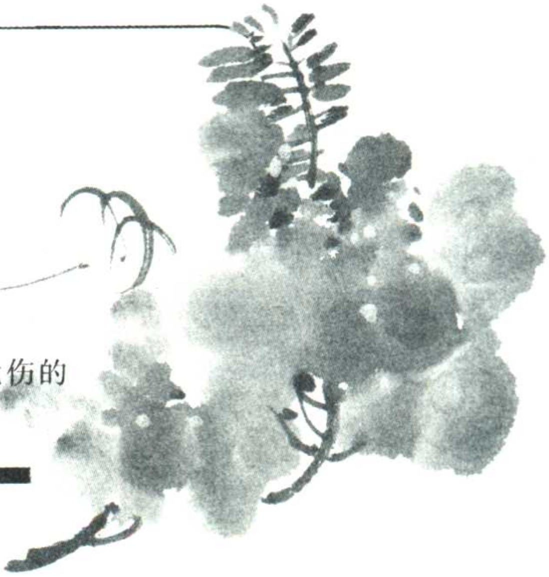
We are **terribly**[1] saddened by the death of your **cherished**[2] sister, our dear aunt; but our sorrow at losing her is as nothing compared to our concern for your sake, because your suffering will be all the greater, Sire, as truly you have no one else left in your world, now that she, who could not have been more precious to you, has departed, and therefore we can only imagine how you sustain the severity of such a sudden and completely unexpected blow. And while I tell you that we share deeply in your **grief**[3], you would do well to draw even greater comfort from contemplating the general state of human **misery**[4], since we are all of us here on Earth like strangers and wayfarers, who soon will be bound for our true homeland in Heaven, where there is perfect happiness, and where we must hope that your sister's blessed soul has already gone. Thus, for the love of God, we pray you, Sire, to be **consoled**[5] and to put yourself in His hands, for, as you know so well, that is what He wants of you; to do otherwise would be to injure yourself and hurt us, too, because we **lament**[6] **grievously**[7] when we hear that you are burdened and troubled, as we have no other source of goodness in this world but you.

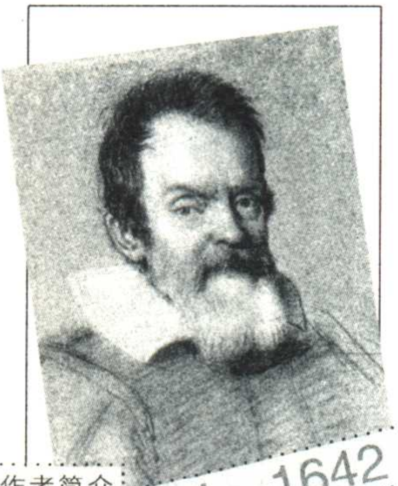
I will say no more, except that with all our hearts we **fervently**[8] pray the Lord to comfort you and be with you always, and we greet you dearly with our ardent love.

Most affectionate daughter
S. Maria Celeste.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. terribly ['teribli] *adv.* 十分，极
2. cherish ['tʃeriʃ] *vt.* 珍爱
3. grief [gri:f] *n.* 悲痛
4. misery ['mizər] *n.* 痛苦
5. console [kən'səul] *vt.* 安慰
6. lament [lə'ment] *n.* 悲伤
7. grievous ['gri:vəs] *adj.* 令人忧伤的
8. fervent ['fə:rənt] *adj.* 炽热的





作者简介 1564—1642

伽利略奥·伽利略

Galileo Galilei

意大利文艺复兴后期伟大的天文学家、物理学家、力学家和哲学家，也是近代实验物理学的开拓者。伽利略的科学发现不仅在物理学史上，而且在整个科学史上都占有极其重要的地位。恩格斯称他是"不管有任何障碍，都能不顾一切打破旧说、创立新说的巨人之一"。爱因斯坦对他的评价是："伽利略的发现，以及他所用的科学推理方法，是人类思想史上最伟大的成就之一，而且标志着物理学的真正开端！"

伽利略和开普勒都是他们那个时代著名的天文学家，难得的是，他们对科学的态度、对天文学的观点都很一致，因此两人常互相交流学术问题，并对当时的错误观点进行批驳。本文就是关于这方面的书信。

伽利略致开普勒的信

你是第一个，甚至可以说是唯一一个在做了短暂的研究后，就对我的声明给予肯定的人！这充分展示了您广阔的思路和极高的智慧。虽然大众不承认木星周围有行星的存在，甚至一些大人物对此表示反对，但我们绝不该为此而烦恼。就让木星稳稳地运行在天空之中吧！让那些阿谀奉承者们任意评论吧……在比萨、佛罗伦萨、博洛尼亚、威尼斯，以及帕多瓦等许多地方的人都曾看到过木星周围的行星。不过人们却对此保持沉默，或犹豫不决，只是因为大众根本不知道木星和火星，更不懂得卫星和行星。在威尼斯，曾有一个人站出来反对我的说法，大言不惭地说我对木星的言论是不正确的，因为他曾观察过几次，认为木星周围根本没有行星存在，人们声称他们经常能够看到木星，因此许多人便出来赞同他的观点。难道让我们与德谟克利特，或赫拉克利特站在同一观点上吗？我的开普勒，我想我们完全可以对大众的愚蠢一笑置之。您是如何同这方面的权威人士就这一问题进行切磋的呢？在这一问题上，我已无数次将自己的研究结果展示给他看，但他对此不屑一顾，而且十分固执，坚决不肯用望远镜看那些行星，或卫星。正是因为这

些阴险的人不肯倾听我们的话，才使大众的眼睛也受到了蒙蔽，使他们无法认识真理……

伽利略

1610年8月19日

Galileo Galilei to Kepler

August 19, 1610.

You are the first and almost the only person who, even after but a **cursory**[1] investigation, has, such is your **openness**[2] of mind and **lofty**[3] genius, given entire credit to my statements . We will not trouble ourselves about the **abuse**[4] of the **multitude**[5], for against Jupiter even giants, to say nothing of pigmies, fight in vain. Let Jupiter stand in the heavens, and let eh sycophants bark at him as they will .In Pisa, Florence, Bologna, Venice, and Padua many have seen the planets; but all are silent on the subject and undecided, for the greater number recognize neither Jupiter nor Mars and scarcely the moon as planet. At Venice one man spoke against me, **boasting**[6] that he knew for certain that my **satellites**[7] of Jupiter, which he had several times observed, were not planets because they were always to be seen with Jupiter, and either all of some them, now followed and now preceded him. What is to be done? Shall we side with Democritus or Heraclitus? I think, my Kepler, we will laugh at the extraordinary **stupidity**[8] of the multitude. What do you say to the leading philosophers of the faculty here, to whom I have offered a thousand times of my own accord to show my studies, but who with the lazy obstinacy of a serpent who has eaten his fill have never **consented to**[9] look at planets, nor moon, nor **telescope**[10]? Verily, just as serpents close their ears, so do these men close their eyes to the light of truth …

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. cursory ['kə:səri] *adj.* 匆匆忙忙的，粗略的
2. openness ['əupənnis] *n.* 公开，文中"openness of mind"指"广阔的思路"。
3. lofty ['lɔ(:)fti] *adj.* 高级的
4. abuse [ə'bju:z] *n.* 滥用
5. multitude ['mʌltitju:d] *n.* 多数，群众
6. boast [bəust] *v.* 自夸
7. satellite ['sætəlait] *n.* 人造卫星
8. stupidity [stju(:)'piditi] *n.* 愚蠢
9. consent to 同意，答应
10. telescope ['teliskəup] *n.* 望远镜



1571—1630

约翰尼斯·开普勒 Johannes Kepler

德国著名的天文学家、数学家、物理学家和哲学家。他以数学的和谐性探索宇宙，在天文学方面做出了巨大的贡献。开普勒是继哥白尼之后第一个站出来捍卫太阳中心说、并在天文学方面有突破性成就的人物，被后世的科学家称为“天上的立法者”。

开普勒致伽利略的信

……我希望颇有远见的您能够选择另外一种方式处理问题。您依据个人的经历建议我们应该小心行事，而对于无知大众的看法不予理睬，甚至对学术界那群乌合之众的恶意攻击也无须反驳。而且，在这一问题上，您遵循了柏拉图和毕达哥拉斯的原则，但与我们同时期的哥白尼和许多颇有学识的数学家经过多番努力后，地球运动学说恐怕很难被改变，就算我们合力也无法使现有学说有任何改变。此时，我们迫不得已，只能在暗中进行研究工作，等到我们有了足够的力量，就应该用有力的声音驳倒大众，这的确要比无休止的争论强得多。我们可以通过更明智的方法让大众得知什么是真理。依您之见，您应该在开展工作期间尽力帮助那些与您一样受到不公正待遇的朋友们。您的立场必定会使他们得到宽慰，甚至可以使他们得到保护。因为，不仅意大利人在感觉不到行星存在的情况下不会相信这种学说，在德国也一样。不过，我们可以通过一些方法来摆脱眼前的困境……

振作起来，伽利略，勇敢地面对社会舆论吧。如果我估计得不错的话，欧洲只有少数数学家站在我们这一边，但这绝对算得上是一种真理的力量。如果说意大利不适合你进行公开研究，或会使你遭遇许多困难，那么也许到德国工作可以为你提供一些自由。

开普勒

1597年

Johannes Kepler to Galileo

1597.

… I could only have wished that you, who have so **profound**[1] an insight, would choose another way?You advise us, by your personal example, and in **discreetly**[2] **veiled**[3] fashion, to retreat before the general ignorance and not to expose ourselves or heedlessly to oppose the violent attacks of the mob of scholars (and in this you follow Plato and Pythagoras, our true perceptors). But after a tremendous task has been begun in our time, first by Copernicus and then by many very learned **mathematicians**[4], and when the assertion that the Earth moves can no longer be considered something new, would it not be much better to pull the wagon to its goal by our joint efforts, now that we have got it under way, and gradually, with powerful voices, to shout down the common herd, which really does not weigh the arguments very carefully? Thus perhaps by cleverness we may bring it to a knowledge of the truth. With your arguments you would at the same time help your comrades who endure so many unjust judgments, for they would obtain either comfort from your agreement or protection from your influential position. It is not only your Italians who cannot believe that they move if they do not feel it, but we in Germany also do not by any means endear ourselves with this idea. Yet there are ways by which we protect ourselves against these difficulties …

Be of good cheer, Galileo, and come out publicly. If I judge correctly, there are only a few of the distinguished mathematicians of Europe who would part company with us, so great is the power of truth. If Italy seems a less **favorable**[5] place for your publication, and if you look for difficulties there, perhaps Germany will allow us this freedom.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. profound [prə'faund] *adj.* 意义深远的
2. discreet [dis'kriːt] *adj.* 小心的
3. veiled [veild] *adj.* 隐藏的
4. mathematician [ˌmæθimə'tiʃən] *n.* 数学家
5. favorable ['feiərəbl] *adj.* 赞成的,有利的,良好的,讨人喜欢的,起促进作用的



契诃夫致高尔基的信

作者简介 1860—1904

契诃夫

Chekhov

俄国伟大的批判现实主义作家、戏剧家、短篇小说大师。他的作品善于从日常生活中发现具有典型意义的人和事，通过幽默可笑的情节进行艺术概括，塑造出完整的人物形象，以此来反映当时的社会。代表作有短篇小说《变色龙》、《套中人》、《万卡》，剧本《万尼亚舅舅》、《三姐妹》等。

高尔基(1868—1936)，原名阿列克赛·马克希莫维奇·彼什科夫，前苏联无产阶级作家，社会主义现实主义文学的奠基人。他的自传性三部曲——《童年》、《在人间》、《我的大学》——是前苏联最优秀的自传文学之一。

高尔基同契诃夫的交往，从1898年他的两卷本《特写与短篇小说集》在圣彼得堡出版时即已开始。两人彼此仰慕，互相勉励，也时有劝告或批评。他们之间的友好往来，一直持续到1904年契诃夫逝世。

您最近的那封信给我带来了极大的快乐。在此，我要向您表达我由衷的谢意。《万尼亚舅舅》是很久以前的作品，我从未见它被搬上舞台；而近年来，以其命名的戏剧经常在省内剧场上演。也许是因为我现阶段已经失去了写戏剧的热望，于是对自己的戏剧已没有什么热情了。

您问我对您笔下的短篇文章有什么意见。我的意见？当然毋庸置疑，您具有非凡的才能——一种真正的、无与伦比的才能。举例为证：在一篇名为《草原》的文章中，彰显了一种非凡的魅力，令我无比钦羡。我为自己没能写出这种好文章而自愧不如。您是艺术家，一个睿智的人，您善于感悟生活、刻画生活。当您描述一样东西时，您不但用眼看，还会用手去感受。这才称得上是真正的艺术。

这便是我对您的看法，我对自己拥有这样一个向您倾诉的机会而深感荣幸。没错，我感到非常荣幸，如果我们能够面对面谈上几个小时的话，您就会明白在我的内心之中您处在多么高的位置上，而我又对您抱有多大的期望了。

现在，请允许我对您作品中的瑕疵作一番评论。指出天才作品中的瑕疵，就好比说花园中的大树有缺点一样。事实上，主要问题不在于树本身，而在于观者的趣味所在，不是吗？

就从您作品中所表现出的情感无法收放自如说起吧。您就像一个在戏院里不能抑制自己的喜悦，打扰了周围观众的人一样。这一缺陷在您插在对话里的自然描写中尤为突出。当读者读到这些章节时，往往希望您能够写得简短些，只需两三行就可以了。而对那些温柔的甜言蜜语、细腻情感等反复地叙述，则会使这种描写显得有些乏味，使读者兴致索然——这一缺陷在《金钱》、《木筏上》等作品中较为突出，尤其在描写女人和恋爱场景的过程中。这不是一种活力，也不是笔触宽广，完全是一种无法将情绪收放自如的表现。"演奏"、"录制"、"调和"——这类言语没有一点好处，您对知识分子的描写会给人一种紧张、过度的感觉。出现这种情况，并不是因为您对知识分子的观察不够，相反，您是了解他们的。可是，您却不知道应该从哪方面描写入手。

我不知道您的年龄，也并不了解您，我甚至不知道您是哪里人、以前从事哪一行。不过，我觉得趁您现在还年轻，您快点离开尼士尼，用两三年的时间好好与文学界的人接触接触。这并不是说让您完全照搬他人的写作方式，去锻炼您的文笔；而是让您在文学的海洋中努力学习，用心去爱它。除此之外，与省内人士交流往往可以使人变得更成熟。柯罗连科、勃泰宾珂、玛敏、叶尔台莉等等，都是优秀人士。与他们在一起，起初也许会使您感到乏味，但经过一两年之后，您就会从中看到他们的长处了。而且在他们的社会里，您可以摆脱在首都生活中必须承受的一切不便……

契诃夫

1898年12月3日于雅尔塔

相关链接

上帝的担忧

1904年7月15日深夜，契诃夫在德国疗养地巴登韦勒去世，他的灵魂不灭，直上天堂。但上帝似乎并不欢迎契诃夫的归来。那天，当他听到契诃夫跨过天堂之门的脚步声，忙问："谁来了？"契诃夫说："我来了。"上帝沉默了半晌，只说了一句："你来了，短篇小说怎么办？"

Anton Pavlovich Chekhov to Gorky

Yalta, December 3, 1898.

Your last letter has given me great pleasure. I thank you with all my heart. "**Uncle Vanya**[1]" was written long, long ago; I have never seen it on the stage. Of late years it has often been produced at **provincial**[2] theatres. I feel cold about my plays as a rule; I gave up the theatre long ago, and feel no desire now to write for the stage.

You ask what is my opinion of your stories. My opinion? The **talent**[3] is **unmistakable**[4] and it is a real, great talent. For instance, in the story "In the Steppe" it is expressed with extraordinary **vigour**[5], and I actually felt a **pang**[6] of envy that it was not I who had written it. You are an artist, a clever man, you feel **superbly**[7], you are **plastic**[8] — that is, when you describe a thing you see it and you touch it with your hands. That is real art.

There is my opinion for you, and I am very glad I can express it to you. I am, I repeat, very glad, and if we could meet and talk for an hour or two you would be convinced of my high appreciation of you and of the hopes I am building on your gifts.

Shall I speak now of **defects**[9]? But that is not so easy. To speak of the defects of a talent is like speaking of the defects of a great tree growing in the garden; what is **chiefly**[10] in question, you see, is not the tree itself but the tastes of the man who is looking at it. Is not that so?

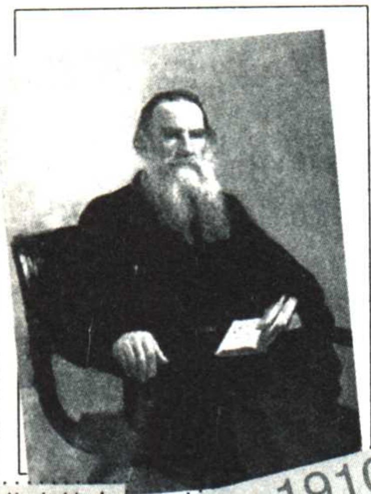
I will begin by saying that to my mind you have not enough **restraint**[11]. You are like a **spectator**[12] at the theatre who expresses his **transports**[13] with so little restraint that he prevents himself and other people from listening. This lack of restraint is particularly felt in the descriptions of nature with which you interrupt your dialogues; when one reads those descriptions one wishes they were more compact, shorter, put into two or three lines. The frequent mention of tenderness, whispering, velvetiness, and so on, give those descriptions a rhetorical and monotonous character — and they make one feel cold and almost exhaust one. The lack of restraint is felt also in the descriptions of women ("Malva," "On the Raft") and love scenes. It is not vigour, not breadth of touch, but just lack of restraint. Then there is the frequent use of words quite unsuitable in stories of your type. "Accompaniment," "disc," "harmony," such words spoil the effect. You often talk of waves. There is a strained feeling and a sort of circumspection in your descriptions of educated people; that is not because you have not observed educated people sufficiently, you know them, but you don't seem to know from what side to approach them.

How old are you? I don't know you, I don't know where you came from or who

you are, but it seems to me that while you are still young you ought to leave Nizhni and spend two or three years rubbing shoulders with literature and literary people; not to learn to crow like the rest of us and to sharpen your wits, but to take the final plunge head first into literature and to grow to love it. Besides, the provinces age a man early. Korolenko, Potapenko, Mamin, Ertel, are first-rate men; you would perhaps at first feel their company rather boring, but in a year or two you would grow used to them and appreciate them as they deserve, and their society would more than repay you for the disagreeableness and inconvenience of life in the capital …

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. Uncle Vanya 书名:《万尼亚舅舅》(契诃夫所作)
2. provincial [prə'vinʃəl] *adj.* 省的
3. talent ['tælənt] *n.* 天才,才干
4. unmistakable ['ʌnmis'teikəbl] *adj.* 明白的,不会弄错的
5. vigour ['vigə] *n.* 元气,活力
6. pang [pæŋ] *n.* 剧痛
7. superb [sjuː'pəːb] superbly *adv.* 雄伟地,壮丽地
8. plastic ['plæstik] *adj.* 可塑性的
9. defect [di'fekt] *n.* 过失,缺点
10. chiefly ['tʃiːfli] *adv.* 主要地
11. restraint [ris'treint] *n.* 抑制,克制,文中契诃夫认为高尔基的作品"无法收放自如"。
12. spectator [spek'teitə] *n.* 观众
13. transport [træns'pɔːt] *vt.* 表达



列夫·托尔斯泰致维拉利亚·阿森涅娃的信

作者简介

1828—1910

列夫·托尔斯泰

Count Leo Tolstoi

十九世纪批判现实主义的杰出代表，俄国最伟大的作家之一。他以有力的笔触和卓越的艺术技巧辛勤创作了“世界文学中第一流的作品”，因此被列宁称为具有“最清醒的现实主义”的“天才艺术家”。主要作品有长篇小说《战争与和平》、《安娜·卡列妮娜》、《复活》等。

托尔斯泰于1862年同御医、八品文官安·叶·别尔斯的女儿索菲亚·安德列耶夫娜结婚，但生性风流的托尔斯泰依然没有停止对爱情的追求。维拉利亚·阿森涅娃是托尔斯泰的邻居、一个地主家的女儿，她的父亲死后，托尔斯泰成了她的监护人，同一年夏天，两人相恋了。这封信就是托尔斯泰当时写给维拉利亚的情书。

我于昨夜到达此处，现在刚刚起床。令我感到欣喜的是，清晨醒来第一个闯入我思绪中的人便是你，于是我便坐下来给你写信——这并不是为了履行承诺，完全是情绪使然。在整个旅途中，你心爱的那个愚笨的男人情绪已完全失控，所以才向你说着这些荒谬而毫无逻辑的话，这样一来，我倒开始有些为他担心了。因为他在旅途中一心想着要回到旅馆，将那些话全部讲给你听，并决意从此再不与你分开。幸运的是，一直以来我都对那个喋喋不休的男人不屑一顾，且从未关注过他。可是，当他再次开始争辩时，他的朋友——一个你并不喜欢的好人便和他一同争论起来，而且，这个好人险些把那个愚笨的男人撕碎了。因为那个蠢人说：“以未来为代价去看清他人是非常愚蠢的，哪怕为此失去瞬间的快乐也是不值得的。”

愚笨的人自语道：“你非常清楚，和她在一起时，只要看着她的脸，听着她的话，并与之交谈，你就会觉得非常幸福。也许你会离开一天，或一个小时；也许你拼命地抑制自己的情感，告诉自己不可以爱得太久，可是，

越是告诫自己不要疯狂地沉浸在爱河之中，便越是无法让自己从这种强烈的情感中抽身出来。更何况，你用一颗冷酷而充满矛盾的内心去面对她那纯洁无私的爱，难道不觉得卑鄙吗？”

听了蠢人的一席话后，好人最初有些迷茫，不知道如何回答他，但后来，他说了这样一番话：“最初和她在一起时，你曾说过你很快乐，然而，你却欺骗了她。没错，与她在一起时，我非常喜欢听她诉说、看着她的眼睛。可是，这并不能称之为幸福，甚至连快乐也算不上，也许莫蒂埃(钢琴家、作曲家)会原谅你，但我却不会；每当我和她在一起时，我就会觉得很悲惨，不过我并没有失去快乐。正如你所说的那样，事实上，我很愿意和她在一起，哪怕只是想想她也会让我觉得快乐。至于你说我冷酷无情，我想说的是，虽然我一直压抑着自己的情感，但这种情感却要比你所谓的情感强千万倍。你所谓的爱，是为了使自己得到幸福，而我对她的爱却是为了她能够得到幸福。”

这便是他们之间争论的话题了。事实上好人总能在争论中占上风，因此我比较喜欢好人。如果我被那个蠢人和你的感想说服，我明白自己可以得到一个月的快乐。我曾经屈服过——就在我离开后的日子里。我感到自己的情绪变得很糟糕，而且对自己的一切都不满意：爱你，竟成了我想要对你说的唯一话题！然而，我却为此而感到羞愧。即便如此，我依然相信自己能够有机会向你诉说——那便是我的幸福时光。

感谢上帝，是他为我指明了方向，让我毅然决然地离开了——我自己根本无法做出抉择。我想，他之所以为我指明了这条路，是为了让我们都幸福。也许你能够原谅那个愚笨之人所说的一切，而却认为我罪孽深重。我为你的美丽而倾倒，不过，我才刚刚学会去爱内在的永恒之美——你的心灵。一个人也许在一个小时里就能够爱上另一个人的美，而放弃这份爱也仅需一个小时而已；但两个人若灵魂相惜，才是真正懂得了爱的真谛。请相信我，在这个世界上没有轻而易举就能够得来的东西，哪怕是爱——世间最美丽、最纯洁的情感。

请原谅我做出这样一个愚蠢的对比：愚笨之人的爱，就像一支不受约束的奏鸣曲一样，完全没有重点，脚踏板一直被狠狠地踩下去。这样做，无论是你，还是听众都无法从中得到真正的快乐；反之，如果能够让感受随着音乐走，那么演奏者就必须学会控制情绪，精心打造这支曲子——请相信我，不这样做，永远也无法在世间找到真正的快乐。任何事都需经过不懈的努力和付出才能够得到——付出的越多，回报便越丰厚。需要我们努力和付出的事情

太多、太多了——我们需要了解彼此，需要珍藏彼此间的爱，还要懂得如何尊重对方。

你真的以为向那个愚笨之人低头就可以使我们理解彼此的感受了吗？也许我们都曾这样认为，但我们之间很快便会出现一道鸿沟，我们一味地沉浸在爱恋之中，却丝毫不懂得如何去将那道越来越深的鸿沟填满。我十分珍视自己的感受——有了这些感受，我们才会永远结合在一起，未来才会更加美好。反之，若没有这些感受，爱也便随之消散了。因此，我非常希望我们可以相互通信，这样一来，我们才能够心平气和地讨论事情；我一定会对你所说的每句话字字斟酌，我们一定能够了解彼此的心——对此，我丝毫不感到怀疑。

现在，万事俱备——彼此都有强烈的好感。争论、教我，或要求我解释。不管怎样，我相信你一定认为我们最终能够了解彼此。不，我们现在只停留在信任彼此的阶段，还没有达到意见一致的阶段。途中，我的思绪始终停留在你我的书信与交谈中。下封信里，我会把自己为Khrapovitskys（托尔斯泰为自己和索菲亚共同取的名字，当谈及两人的关系时就会用到它）今后的生活之路所作的计划写给你……

托尔斯泰

1865年11月2日于莫斯科

相关链接

托尔斯泰逝世后，人们发现在他使用过的笔记本上，写着这样一些语句："使……没有粮食，使……没有马匹，使……没有森林，使……没有力量。你使我无力……我习惯了骑马了，我习惯学习了，或者生疏了，我和妻子处得来了，顽皮了……""你想向前去，但是腿却朝后走。"……人们一直弄不明白这写的是些什么，后来托尔斯泰的研究家们才弄明白，这些杂乱的语句，既不是写的日记，也不是构思的草稿，而是托尔斯泰在作组词造句练习时写下的各种类型的句子。那时托尔斯泰已经五十多岁了，出版了好些名著，被读者视为文学巨匠，但他仍像小学生一样，认真地进行组词造句的练习。

Count Leo Tolstoi to Valeria Arsenev

Moscow, 2 November 1856.

I arrived last night and have just got up, and I rejoiced to feel that my first

thought was of you and that I was sitting down to write, not **in order to**[1] keep a promise, but because I really want to. Throughout the journey, your favorite, the foolish man, got completely out of hand and talked such nonsense and made such absurd, though delightful, plans that I began to be afraid of him. He reached the point of wanting to go back in order to return to Sudakovo, to say a lot of foolish things to you and never to part from you again. Fortunately I've long since got used to despising his arguments and paying no attention to him. But when he started arguing, his friends the good man whom you don't like also began to argue and tore the foolish man to shreds. The foolish man said that it was foolish to risk the future, to test oneself and to lose even one moments happiness.

You know you're happy when you're with her, looking at her, listening and talking, the foolish man said, so why deprive yourself of this happiness. Perhaps you've only a day, only an hour left to live, perhaps you're so constituted that you can't love for long and this is after all the strongest love you're able to feel if you would only abandon yourself to it freely. Then again isn't it nasty of you to respond with such cold, **deliberate**[2] feelings to her pure, devoted love?

The foolish man said all this, but the good man, although a little confused at first, replied to all this as follows: In the first place you're lying when you say you're happy with her. True, I feel pleasure in listening to her and looking into her eyes, but this isn't happiness, nor even a worthwhile pleasure, **excusable**[3] in a Mortier (pianist and composer), but not in me; then again I often feel miserable when I'm with her; but the main thing is that I'm not losing my happiness, as you call it, at all, but am happy with her even though when I can't see her. As for what you call my cold feelings, I can tell you that they're a 1,000 times stronger and better than your feelings, although I do keep them in check. You love her for the sake of your own happiness, but I love her for the sake of her happiness.

This is how they argued, and the good man is right a 1,000 times over. Love him a little. If I were to give way to the foolish man's feelings and to yours, I know that all that would come of it would be a month's tumultu ous happiness. I was giving way to them just now before I left and I felt that I was becoming bad and dissatisfied with myself: I could say nothing to you except foolish words of endearment, of which I am now ashamed. There will be time for that, and a happy time.

I thank God that He suggested the idea to me and confirmed me in my own **intention**[4] of going away, because I couldn't have done it by myself. I believe that He guided me for the sake of our **mutual**[5] happiness. It's excusable for you think and feel as the foolish man does, but it would be disgraceful and sinful for me. I already love in you your beauty, but I'm only beginning to love what is eternal in you and forever precious — your heart, your soul. Beauty one can get to know and love in an hour, and cease to love just as quickly, but the soul one has to learn to love. Believe me,

nothing on earth comes without hard work, not even love, the most beautiful and natural of feelings.

Forgive me this foolish comparison: to love as the foolish man does is to play a **sonata**[6] without keeping time, without **accents**[7], with the pedal always down, but with feeling, giving no true pleasure thereby either to oneself or to others. But in order to allow oneself to give way to the feeling of the music, one must first hold oneself in check, work and work hard — and believe me there is no pleasure to be had in life without doing so. Everything is acquired by hard work and privation. But the harder the work and the privation, the higher the reward. And the hard work ahead of us is enormous-to understand each other and to retain each other's love and respect.

Do you really think that if we had give way to the foolish man's feeling we should have understood each other now? We might have thought so, but later we would have noticed a huge gulf, and having wasted our feelings on foolish endearments we should have nothing left to fill it up with. I guard my feelings like a treasure, because they alone are capable of uniting us firmly in our views on life, without this there is no love. In this respect I expect a great deal from our correspondence; we shall discuss things calmly; I shall try to fathom every word of yours and you will do the same, and I don't doubt that we shall understand each other.

All the necessary conditions exist-there are feelings and honesty on both sides. Argue, contend, teach me, ask me for explanations. I suppose you'll say we understand each other as it is. No, we only trust each other but we're not agreed yet about many things. On the journey I was turning over in my mind 1,000 things, letters and conversations. In my next letter I shall write to you about plans for the way of life of the Khrapovitskys (the name Tolstoy gave to himself and Valeriya when discussing their relationship) …

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. in order to 为了……
2. deliberate [di'libəreit] *adj.* 深思熟虑的
3. excusable [iks'kjuːzəbl] *adj.* 可原谅的，可允许的
4. intention [in'tenʃən] *n.* 目的，意图
5. mutual ['mjuːtjuəl] *adj.* 相互的，共同的
6. sonata [sə'naːtə] *n.* [音]奏鸣曲
7. accent ['æksənt] *n.* 重音符





1759—1796

罗伯特·彭斯 Robert Burns

苏格兰十八世纪最伟大的诗人，在英国文学史上占有极其重要的地位。他的诗歌充满了激进的民主、自由的思想，并富有音乐性，歌颂了故国家乡的秀美，抒发了人们纯朴的友谊和爱情。人们耳熟能详的苏格兰民歌《友谊地久天长》的歌词就是彭斯所写。

埃里森·拜珀是一个小农场主的女儿，美丽善良，并且受过良好教育，彭斯对她一见钟情，并特意为她写了一首诗来表达爱意，但最终拜珀还是拒绝了彭斯。

罗伯特·彭斯致埃里森·拜珀的信

亲爱的埃里森：

我完全相信，人世间真挚的爱恋和道德与虔诚的信仰一样都是极为珍贵的。我希望这句话能够符合我这封信的风格。这封信之所以显得有些特别，是因为我是本着极其认真的态度写给你的。老实说，我时常怕你把我当作一个狂热的教徒，与自己心爱的人谈话就像与说教者对话一样。我不知道这到底是怎么回事，除了你陪在我身边之外，世间没有任何一件事能够与给你写信更能够使我感到快乐。然而，即便给你写信也没能使我达到如醉如痴的程度——相信情侣之间常有这种情况发生。

我常想如果一种至死不渝的爱即便不能被称作是一种美德，至少也非常接近美德了。每当我的思绪里有了你，我的内心便会燃起一团火焰，而我所有的美好感觉，所有深切的情感都会升腾起来，从而使我变得欢欣鼓舞。一切卑劣与邪恶的念头都会因这种情感而逝去——这种情感时常激荡在我心中。

于是，我带着宽广的胸怀面对每一个人；我与满心欢喜的人一同快乐，与不幸之人一同忧愁。我的爱人，我向你保证，我时常带着一颗感恩的心期待着命运的主宰，希望命运之神可以赐予我幸福——让我拥有你。我希望他能让我如愿以偿——为你带去一生的幸福，使你安康、快乐。无论我是否开心，无

论我遭遇何种困境,我的爱人,我都会带着一种激情去实现我的诺言。至少在我看来,这一切都是值得的——应该说,对于一个基督徒而言,这完全是值得的。

在这肮脏的世界上——许多卑劣的家伙"衷情"于某个女子,其实不过是看中了她的钱袋;一些苦命的劳工,只能随便选一个妻子,就像到市场上去挑选一匹强壮而忠实的马儿一样——既能吃苦,性情又温驯。然而,我却蔑视他们那不纯洁的思想。

严肃说来,如果我和上述那些人一样,对女性持有如此卑劣的想法,游戏人生,那么我一定会对自己很不屑。可悲的恶魔啊!我绝不以拥有这种观点为荣,也从不羡慕你们!对我而言,我会用自己的方式为爱人带去另一种欢乐!

彭斯

1780年于洛荷里亚

相关链接

联合国秘书长科斐·安南就曾选择彭斯诗中的"A Man's a Man for a' that"作为他呼吁人们在面对种族歧视时要保持容忍的基础。2004年1月,科斐·安南这样评价彭斯:"彭斯的诗歌赋予了今天全世界大多数人面对的斗争以崇高的意义。让我们像他那样梦想一个兄弟姐妹般的时代,那个能包含和容纳所有种族,并且让所有人都有一个享受不可剥夺的权利——自由和尊严的机会。"

Robert Burns to Ellison Begbie

Lochlie, 1780.

my dear E,

I **verily**[1] believe, that the pure genuine feelings of love are as rare in the world as the pure genuine principles of virtue and **piety**[2]. This, I hope, will account for the uncommon style of all my letters to you. By uncommon, I mean their being written in such a serious manner, which, to tell you the truth, has made me often afraid lest you should take me for some **zealous**[3] **bigot**[4], who conversed with his mistress as he would converse with his minister. I don't know how it is, my dear; for though, except your

company, there is nothing on earth gives me so much pleasure as writing to you, yet it never gives me those **giddy**[5] **raptures**[6] so much talked of among lovers.

I have often thought, that if a well-grounded affection be not really a part of virtue, 'tis something extremely akin to it. Whenever the thought of my E. warms my heart, every feeling of humanity, every principle of generosity, kindles in my breast. It extinguishes every dirty spark of malice and envy, which are but too apt to infest me.

I grasp every creature in the arms of universal benevolence, and equally participate in the pleasures of the happy, and sympathise with the miseries of the unfortunate. I assure you, my dear, I often look up to the Divine disposer of events with an eye of gratitude for the blessing which I hope He intends to **bestow on**[7] me, in bestowing you. I sincerely wish that He may bless my **endeavours**[8] to make your life as comfortable and happy as possible, both in sweetening the rougher parts of my natural temper, and bettering the unkindly circumstances of my fortune. This, my dear, is a passion, at least in my view, worthy of a man, and, I will add, worthy of a Christian.

The sordid earth-worm may profess love to a woman's person, whilst, in reality, his affection is centred in her pocket; and the slavish drudge may go a-wooing as he goes to the horse-market, to choose one who is stout and firm, and as we say of an old horse, one who will be a good drudge and draw kindly. I disdain their dirty, puny ideas.

I would be heartily out of humour with myself, if I thought I were capable of having so poor a notion of the sex, which were designed to crown the pleasures of society. Poor devils! I don't envy them their happiness who have such notions. For my part, I propose quite other pleasures with my dear partner.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. verily ['verili] *adv.* 真正地
2. piety ['paiəti] *n.* 虔诚,孝行
3. zealous ['zeləs] *adj.* 热心的
4. bigot ['bigət] *n.* 盲目信仰者
5. giddy ['gidi] *adj.* 眼花缭乱的
6. rapture ['ræptʃə] *n.* 全神贯注
7. bestow on 赠予
8. endeavour [in'devə] *n.* 尽力,竭力





李斯特
致卡尔·车尔尼的信

作者简介 1811—1886

弗朗茨·李斯特

Franz Liszt

匈牙利著名作曲家、钢琴家、指挥家，伟大的浪漫主义大师。李斯特生于匈牙利雷定，六岁起学钢琴，先后师从多位钢琴名家。他将钢琴的技巧发展到了无与伦比的高度，极大地丰富了钢琴的表现力；在钢琴上创造了管弦乐的效果，还首创了背谱演奏法，而他本人则具有超群的即兴演奏才能，他也因此获得了“钢琴之王”的美称。李斯特在作曲方面的代表作有《塔索》、《匈牙利》、《前奏曲》、《玛捷帕》、《普罗米修斯》等十三部前奏曲、十九首匈牙利狂想曲、十二首高级练习曲等。

卡尔·车尔尼（1791—1857），奥地利著名作曲家、钢琴家、音乐教育家。车尔尼师从著名音乐家、作曲家贝多芬，是贝多芬最得意的学生。他免费教李斯特弹琴，李斯特也说：“我的一切都是车尔尼教我的。”

尊敬的老师：

明明亏欠您太多，可我却已好久没有把您想起——这使我感到羞愧、痛苦；而且，一想到您也许已将我遗忘，我更是陷入无尽的绝望之中！“是的，”我带着这种酸楚的心情对自己说，“我真是一个无情无义的家伙！我竟然把自己的恩师抛在脑后，我竟然把赋予我才能、并助我走向成功的恩师全然忘记了！”……想到这儿，我不禁潸然泪下——再没有哪种悔恨的泪水比我的泪更真诚了！流下的泪仿佛是在为我赎罪，请原谅，我亲爱的老师，我实在无法忍受自己成为您心中那个令您不屑的人。您一定会原谅我，是吗？到那时，我们是否可以拥抱在一起……太好了！想到这些，我的心仿佛看到了曙光。

您无须怀疑，您创作的曲子已使我的演奏获得了巨大的成功，当然，一切都应该归功于您。我本打算后天在“海盗”音乐厅演奏您的作品——那是一个非常豪华的音乐厅，我曾在那里为H.R.H.夫人做过现场表演，奥尔良公爵夫人也亲临现场。可是，天有不测风云，我突然得了风疹，不得不向那场音乐

会作别。不过，我并没有因为此次音乐会的延期而心灰意懒。我只希望自己能够快点好起来，让更多的人能够听到您创作的变奏曲。

皮克西斯（著名钢琴演奏家）和其他人都对我说您的第四协奏曲已于近期创作完成了，并在巴黎引起了不小的轰动。这个消息令我备感欣慰。敬爱的老师，如果您能将作品出售——我这里条件便捷——倘若我能获得首次演奏权的话，无论在剧场，还是在大型音乐会上，我都愿意用心去演奏。如果您能够接受我的建议，就请您将作品寄于奥地利大使馆——您可以将作品的价格列出来。如果哪一章节有变更，您只需用红色铅笔标出即可——由于我十分熟悉您的笔体，所以我会告诉编辑人员注意您作标记的地方。与此同时，希望您能够来信告诉我维也纳有没有出新的作品，或有为的钢琴演奏家；最后，我亲爱的老师，请告诉我，您认为您的哪部作品可以在全社会引起强烈反响。

我衷心地祝福您，并希望您能够原谅我久未与您联系这一过失——

为此，我和您一样，内心充满了痛苦。

挚爱着您的、带着无限感激的学生

弗朗茨·李斯特

维也纳

相关链接

李斯特的《12首高级练习曲》是钢琴史上令人生畏的高难曲目，当年李斯特将此曲献给他的恩师车尔尼，而车尔尼则是贝多芬的学生，因而李斯特在音乐中所表现的豪放不羁和宏大的气势，体现了与乐圣一脉相承的艺术传统。从技巧上看，李斯特的这12首作品难度过分艰深，仿佛是钢琴演奏艺术的象牙塔尖，即使在20世纪钢琴大师如过江之鲫的年代，也很少有演奏家敢于挑战。

Franz Liszt to Carl Czerny

Vienna.

My very dear Master,

When I think of all the **immense**[1] **obligations**[2] under which I am placed towards you, and at the same time consider how long I have left you without a sign of re-

membrance, I am perfectly ashamed and miserable, and in despair of ever being forgiven by you!

"Yes," I said to myself with a deep feeling of bitterness, "I am an ungrateful fellow; I have forgotten my benefactor, I have forgotten that good master to whom I owe both my talent and my success." ··· At these words a tear starts to my eyes, and I assure you that no repentant tear was ever more sincere! Receive it as an expiation, and pardon me, for I cannot any longer bear the idea that you have any **ill-feeling**[3] towards me. You will pardon me, my dear Master, won't you? Embrace me then ··· good! Now my heart is light.

You have doubtless heard that I have been playing your admirable works here with the greatest success, and all the glory ought to be given to you. I intended to have played your **variations**[4] on the "Pirate" the day after tomorrow at a very brilliant concert that I was to have given at the theater of H.R.H. Madame, who was to have been present as well as the Duchess of Orleans; but man proposes and God disposes. I have suddenly caught the measles, and have been obliged to say farewell to the concert; but it is not given up because it is put off, and I hope, as soon as ever I am well again, to have the pleasure of making these beautiful variations known to a large public.

Pixis (a notable pianist (1788—1874) — lived a long time in Paris) and several other people have spoken much to me of four concertos that you have lately finished, and the reputation of which is already making a stir in Paris. I should be very much pleased, my dear Master, if you would commission me to get them sold. This would be quite easy for me to do, and I should also have the pleasure of playing them From First Hand, either at the opera or at some big concerts. If my proposition pleases you, send them to me by the Austrian Embassy, marking the price that you would like to have for them. As regards any passages to be altered, if there are any, you need only mark them with a red pencil, according to your plan which I know so well, and I will point them out to the editor with the utmost care. Give me at the same time some news about music and pianists in Vienna; and finally tell me, dear Master, which of your compositions you think would make the best effect in society.

I close by sending you my heartfelt greetings, and begging you once more to pardon the shameful silence I have kept towards you: be assured that it has given me as much pain as yourself!

Your very affectionate and grateful pupil

Franz Liszt.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. immense [i'mens] *adj.* 极大的
2. obligation [ˌɔbli'geiʃən] *n.* 义务
3. ill-feeling 恶感，反感
4. variation [ˌvɛəri'eiʃən] *n.* 变更，变化



1883—1924

弗兰茨·卡夫卡 Franz Kafka

奥地利小说家，西方现代派文学的奠基人，表现主义文学的先驱。他的作品主题曲折晦涩，情节支离破碎，思路不连贯，跳跃性很大，语言的象征意义很强，并通过对生活在下层的小人物的描写，表现了他对人的历史、人的本质、人的命运、人的处境、人与人及人与社会的关系的思考。代表作有长篇小说《审判》、《城堡》，短篇小说《变形记》等。

这是卡夫卡写给父亲的一封信。

卡夫卡致父亲的信

最亲爱的父亲：

您近来曾问过我，为什么我对您有种畏惧心理。和往常一样，我依然不知道如何回答这个问题——这也许是因为我的确畏惧您，而产生这种畏惧心理的因素又太多，不知从何谈起。因此，我决定以书信的形式回答您的问题，不过，恐怕这封信也无法将我的想法全部涵盖进去——即使在写信的时候，我对您的那种惧畏心理也不曾减少半分，这便有碍于我和您随心所欲地交流，加之需要提及的事情太多，远非我的心智所能及。

对您而言，这一问题实在简单至极，甚至您还丝毫不加掩饰地对周围人提及。也许您是这样想的：您一生含辛茹苦，为儿女，尤其是为我牺牲了一切，因而我才能过上如此“奢华而放纵”的生活，并可以随意选择自己想学习的东西，根本不必为物质生活而担忧，因而便可称得上是“无忧无虑”了。您从未期盼我能对此心存感激，也不需要了解儿女内心的“感激之情”。您只希望我们要懂得守规矩，多理解您一些，而不是时时躲着您，待在自己的屋里，或埋在书中，或和一群疯狂的朋友在一起，或每日想入非非……

如果说我要逃避您，那么我同样得逃避整个家庭，甚至包括我的母亲。虽然母亲经常保护着我们，但她也常常受到您的影响。因为她太爱您了，所以才对您如此忠贞、如此顺从。因此，在这场孩子与家长的战争中，她不可能以一

种独立的态度依据自身的意见来做出公证的评判。不过，话说回来，这样却可以使孩子形成一种正确的本能反应。因为，随着岁月的流逝，母亲对您的爱也与日俱增；当事情涉及到她本人时，她总是谦恭地维护着她最低限度的独立性，尽量不伤害您的情感。可是，您对孩子的批评和评断，却使母亲越来越盲从……

妹妹们只在某些方面站在我这边。与您关系最融洽的是瓦莉，她跟母亲也是最为亲近的。她对您十分顺从，就像您所期待的那样。正因为她的做法使您想到母亲，由此您对她也颇为亲切，尽管卡夫卡家族的气质在她身上体现得很少。不过，您或许认为这样才更适合她，正因为她身上缺少这种气质，您对她便没有过多的要求；也不像在其他人身上，有一种患得患失的感觉。更何况，只要女人身上表现出一种卡夫卡家族的气质，总是无法讨您的喜欢……

您对我的写作，以及那些与此相关的事情感到不理解，且抱有反感。在这一点上，我确实采取了一些行动，与您多少产生了一点距离，就算这使人想到虫子也罢——这条虫子的尾部被人用脚踩住，它挣扎着带着前半部分身子逃脱了。摆脱了您，我多少重拾了一些自信，也可以喘口气了……

对您提出的问题，我想说，以上所述毕竟出自我的笔下，这些反驳的话也完全可以用来反对您。您对别人的不信任，其强烈程度远不及我对自己的不信任，而这一切正是您教育我的结果。我认为这种反驳含有某种合理因素，而且还可以为描述我们之间的关系提供一些新的参考。当然，事实情况恐怕很难与我信中所描述的完全一致。生活是一种复杂的游戏。但是，这种反驳也等于是做了一些修正，这是一种我既不能，也不愿详细阐述的修正。我认为，经过这种修正后，我们便能够获得某种近乎真理的东西，这会使我们都能够稍感安慰，死得也轻松些。

弗兰茨



Franz Kafka to His Father

Dearest father,

You asked me recently why I maintain that I am afraid of you. As usual, I was unable to think of any answer to your question, partly for the very reason that I am afraid of you, and partly because an explanation of the grounds for this fear would mean going into far more details than I could even **approximately**[1] keep in mind while talking. And if I now try to give you an answer in writing, it will still be very **incomplete**[2], because, even in writing, this fear and its consequences **hamper**[3] me in relation to you and because the magnitude of the subject goes far beyond the **scope**[4] of my memory and power of reasoning.

To you the matter always seemed very simple, at least in so far as you talked about it in front of me, and **indiscriminately**[5] in front of many other people. It looked to you more or less as follows: you have worked hard all your life, have sacrificed everything for your children, above all for me, consequently I have lived high and handsome, have been completely at liberty to learn whatever I wanted, and have had no cause for material worries, which means worries of any kind at all. You have not expected any gratitude for this, knowing what "children's gratitude" is like, but have expected at least some sort of **obligingness**[6], some sign of sympathy. Instead I have always hidden from you, in my room, among my books, with crazy friends, or with crackpot ideas.

If I was to escape from you, I had to escape from the family as well, even from Mother. True, one could always get protection from her, but only in relation to you. She loved you too much and was too devoted and loyal to you to have been for long an independent spiritual force in the child's struggle. This was, incidentally, a correct instinct of the child, for with the passing of the years Mother became ever more closely allied to you; while, where she herself was concerned, she always kept her independence, within the narrowest limits, delicately and beautifully, and without ever essentially hurting you, still, with the passing of the years she more and more completely, emotionally rather than intellectually, blindly adopted your judgments and your **condemnations**[7] with regard to the children.

My sisters were only partly on my side. The one who was happiest in her relation to you was Valli. Being closest to Mother, she fell in with your wishes in a similar way, without much effort and without suffering much harm. And because she reminded you of Mother, you did accept her in a more friendly spirit, although there was little Kafka material in her. But perhaps that was precisely what you wanted; where there was nothing of the Kafka's, even you could not demand anything of the sort, nor did

you feel, as with the rest of us, that something was getting lost which had to be saved by force. Besides, it may be that you were never particularly fond of the Kafka element as it **manifested**[8] itself in women.

You struck closer to home with your aversion to my writing and to everything that, unknown to you, was connected with it. Here I had, in fact, got some distance away from you by my own efforts, even if it was slightly reminiscent of the worm that, when a foot treads on its tail end, breaks loose with its front part and drags itself aside. To a certain extent I was in safety; there was a chance to breathe freely.

My answer to this is that, after all, this whole rejoinder — which can partly also be turned against you — does not come from you, but from me. Not even your mistrust of others is as great as my self-mistrust, which you have bred in me. I do not deny a certain justification for this rejoinder, which in itself contributes new material to the characterization of our relationship. Naturally things cannot in reality fit together the way the evidence does in my letter; life is more than a Chinese puzzle. But with the correction made by this rejoinder — a correction I neither can nor will elaborate in detail-in my opinion something has been achieved which so closely approximates the truth that it might reassure us both a little and make our living and our dying easier.

Franz.

热词空间 Hot Word Space



1. approximately [əprɔksi'mətli] *adv.* 近似地，大约
2. incomplete [ˌinkəm'pliːt] *adj.* 不完全的，不完善的
3. hamper ['hæmpə] *v.* 妨碍，牵制
4. scope [skəup] *n.* (活动)范围，机会，余地
5. indiscriminate [ˌindis'kriminit] *adj.* 不分皂白的
6. obliging [ə'blaidʒiŋ] *adj.* 亲切的
7. condemnation [ˌkɔndem'neiʃən] *n.* 谴责
8. manifest ['mæniest] *adj.* 显然的



莫扎特致父亲的信

作者简介 1756—1791

莫扎特

Mozart

奥地利伟大的作曲家，维也纳古典乐派的杰出代表。他广泛采用各种乐曲形式，成功地把德、奥、意等国的民族音乐和欧洲的传统音乐有机地融合在一起，赋予它们深刻的思想内容和完美的形式，为西方音乐的发展开辟了崭新的道路。对后世音乐创作产生了极大的影响。莫扎特在其短促的一生中共创作了七十五部作品，留下了《费加罗的婚礼》、《唐璜》、《后宫诱逃》、《魔笛》等著名歌剧，使歌剧成为具有市民特点的新体裁，并作有大量交响曲、协奏曲、钢琴曲和室内乐重奏。

莫扎特的父亲列奥波里很重视对子女的早期教育，从莫扎特四岁起，列奥波里就开始让他弹钢琴、拉小提琴，并带他到世界各地演出；同时，为了保证儿子的文化基础，列奥波里还对莫扎特进行系统的补课，教他学习拉丁文，学习音乐家必修的意大利文，以及法文和英文。正是在父亲的严格要求下，再加上莫扎特自己的刻苦努力，他终于成为一位世界闻名的音乐家。

亲爱的父亲：

这次的排练令我十分担忧——迄今为止，我从未听过这么糟糕的演奏。排练头两次他们都笨手笨脚、异常混乱，您很难想象当时的情形。正因如此，我本想进行第三次排练，可是我需要排练的作品还有很多，时间根本来不及。不得已，我只能带着恐惧、不满和气愤的情绪上床睡觉。我原本决定第二天取消演出；可令人意想不到的是，那天晚上一切都很顺利，而且他们与我签订了协议。如果正式演出依然像排练时那样糟糕，我可以径直走到乐队中，从拉胡斯先生手里把乐器抢过来由自己指挥(注文：拉胡斯是乐队的首席小提琴手，当年还不存在手持指挥棒站在前边指挥整个乐队的演出方式，负责乐队在演出时整体协调的是演奏键盘乐器的乐手，或首席小提琴手)。

我祈求万能的上帝能够助我演出成功，看吧！演出开始了！拉夫(歌手，同时也是莫扎特的好友)站在我近前，当第一乐章被奏响时，观众们的情绪达到了第一个高潮。第一乐章演奏结束时，我又不得不重复

演奏了几次——早在我创作这支乐曲时，就知道它会产生这样的效应——观众发出了经久不息的掌声。

第二乐章开始了，它同样受到了大家的热烈欢迎，尤其是最后一部分。和第一乐章类似，各种乐器都整齐划一，八个小节均以舒缓的曲调为主，然后突然高潮迭起——小提琴手的演奏也正如我所期盼的那样，观众们刹时间都惊叹起来，再次发出了雷鸣般的掌声。

相关链接

莫扎特非凡的音乐天赋在他很小的时候就已经表现出来了。有一次，父亲列奥波里与一位朋友一起回家，看到四岁的莫扎特正聚精会神地趴在五线谱纸上写东西，父亲就问他在干什么。儿子一本正经地回答："我在作曲。"孩子稚嫩的声音使两位大人哈哈大笑，面对着纸上歪七扭八的音符，他们以为这不过是小孩的胡闹。然而，当细心的父亲将儿子的作品认真地看了几眼之后，忽然兴奋地对客人喊道："亲爱的，你快来看！这上面写的是多么正确而有意义啊！"就这样，天才开始了他的创作生涯！

Mozart to His Father

I was exceedingly anxious at **rehearsal**[1], for never in my life have I heard a worse performance. You can have no conception of how they bungled and scrambled through it the first time and the second. Really I was quite frightened and would have liked to rehearse it once more, but there was so much else to rehearse (Mozart's symphony was being played along with many other works) that there was no time left. Accordingly I went to bed with fear in my heart, **discontent**[2] and anger in my mind. I had decided not to go to the concert at all the next day; but it was a fine evening, and I finally **resolved**[3] to go with the proviso that if things went as ill as at the rehearsal I would certainly make my way into the **orchestra**[4], snatch Herr Lahouse's instrument from his hand and conduct myself! ("Herr Lahouse" was the principal **violinist**[5] of the orchestra. In those days, nobody stood in front of an orchestra to conduct with a

baton[6]. Performances were led either by someone at a keyboard, or by the principal violinist.)

I prayed God it might go well, dedicating all to His greater honor and glory, and ecce! (behold) — the symphony began! Raff (a famous singer who was friendly to Mozart) stood near me, and in the midst of the first allegro (the first movement) came a passage I had known would please. The audience was quite carried away — there was a great **outburst**[7] of applause. But, since I knew when I wrote it that it would make a sensation, I had brought it in again in the last — and then it came again, da capo! (An Italian expression, meaning that something is repeated.)

The **andante**[8] (the second movement) also found favor, but particularly the last allegro (the final movement) because, having noticed that all last allegri here opened, like the first, with all instruments together and usually in unison, I began with two violins only, piano (softly) for eight bars only, then forte (loudly), so that at the piano (as I had expected) the audience said "Sh! " and when they heard the forte began at once to clap their hands.



热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. rehearsal [ri'həːsəl] *n.* 排演，练习
2. discontent ['diskən'tent] *n.* 不满
3. resolve [ri'zɔlv] *adj.* 下定决心的
4. orchestra ['ɔːkistrə] *n.* 管弦乐队
5. violinist ['vaiəlinist] *n.* 小提琴演奏者
6. baton ['bætən] *n.* 指挥棒
7. outburst ['autbəːst] *n.* 爆发，突发
8. andante [æn'dænti] *n.* 缓慢的曲子



作者简介

1853—1890

文森特·凡·高

Vincent van Gogh

荷兰著名的后印象派画家，被认为是继伦勃朗之后荷兰最伟大的、具有世界影响的画家。他的作品色彩明亮、鲜艳，吸收了印象派的精髓，却反对印象派纯客观理性的描绘，提倡注重事物的实质和象征意念。他是现代艺术最重要的先驱，毕加索曾这样评价凡·高："这人如不是一个疯子，就是我们当中最出色的。"凡·高27岁时才开始绘画，在短短十年间，画了800多幅油画及同等数目的素描，却几乎从未觅得买家，只能长期依赖弟弟西奥在经济和精神上对他给予支持。

凡·高的弟弟是凡·高生活中唯一的支柱，凡·高一生中始终和弟弟保持着亲密的关系，虽然他们的关系并非一直很完美，也有过摩擦和不愉快，但西奥并没有动摇支持兄长的信心。两人之间的大量通信也可以帮助世人更加了解凡·高的作品和内心世界。

凡·高致弟弟的信

1

亲爱的西奥：

谢谢你能给我来信，真希望你能够经常写信给我，因为我非常想了解你的近况。而且，希望你尽量将信写得详尽些，最好能把日常生活中的事情都讲给我听——你应该看得出，我也是以这种方式给你写信的。你信中提到的关于博克斯的事非常有趣，至于他如何创办自己的工作室，你多久去一次等事情，希望你能来信告诉我。

我们都感到非常孤寂，渴望有朋友陪伴左右。我们一厢情愿地以为，只要找到一个"情投意合"的朋友，我们就会快乐起来。可是，相信你也开始领悟到这一点：这种渴望完全是自欺欺人的。如果我们对其投入了太多的心思，它定会将我们引入歧途……

我这边也发生了一些事情：我的朋友葛拉威尔搬走了。他决定寄居在印刷所的一个雇员家里——那个雇员千方百计地劝他搬走，并终于如愿所偿。

我知道葛拉威尔的决定有些欠考虑，我为此感到非常惋惜。也许这个月月末他就会搬走。

近来，在那个被我们称之为“房子”的地方出现了一只老鼠，我们每天晚上都会把一块面包放在地上。现在，那个小东西已经知道到哪儿能找到食物了。

我在英语报纸上读到了一些广告，我已经回复了一些。希望能够有所收获。

如果鲁丝他们提到我，请代我向他们问好。希望你尽快回信。一定要告诉我特斯蒂格先生是否在你面前提起我；无论何时，只要收到我的信，一定要代我向他问好。

爱你的哥哥文森特

1876年1月于巴黎

2

亲爱的西奥：

星期一，我从拉姆斯盖特来到了伦敦。这次出行真可谓千辛万苦。出发那天，天气异常炎热，没想到的是，当我到达坎特伯雷的时候，天气依然酷热难耐。为了避免这种高温天气的侵袭，那天夜里我赶了很远的路。后来，我在一个小河边停下脚来，四周生长着许多山毛榉和榆树，我在那里稍作休息。次日凌晨三点半的时候，鸟儿们便纷纷唱起歌儿来，共同迎接清晨第一缕阳光，伴着鸟鸣声，我再次踏上了旅程。唉！这真可谓是一次精彩绝伦的旅行啊！

中午时分，我来到了查塔姆。在那里，放眼望去，便可看到低处的草原中间那滚滚浪花——泰晤士河上的船只正穿梭往来；在我看来，这里可算是“天无半日晴”。

在那儿，我偶遇一辆轻便马车，于是便搭了个便车，赶了几英里路。后来，车夫便在一家旅馆留宿了，如果我想继续搭乘他的车，恐怕要等上好一阵子。于是，我决定继续赶路。夜幕降临时，我来到了熟悉的伦敦郊区——我曾多次往返于这里和城市，去拜会一些朋友，尤其是我曾在信中提到的牧师……

如果我找工作的话，我希望能够在伦敦郊区当一名牧师，或传教士，为工

人阶级服务。

西奥，千万不要向任何人提及我的这个念头。我在斯托克先生那里得到的薪水十分微薄，仅能使我糊口；而且，仅有的休息时间也被"特别培训课"所占用。如果我全部的时间都用来工作的话，每年也不过能挣到八英磅而已……

弟弟，也许你会在我写给牧师的信中读到这句话："他这个人不错，相当不错！"这一点是毋庸置疑的。无论他是谁，希望你都能偶尔留意一下他。让我握握你的手吧。

爱你的哥哥文森特

1876年6月17日于拉姆斯盖特

相关链接

荷兰以拥有凡·高这样的大艺术家而自豪，而凡·高在世时，一般荷兰人却不知道他们的国家还有一个叫凡·高的画家。凡·高一生创作了二千多幅珍贵作品，可在世时卖出的只有一件，还是在布鲁塞尔卖给了一位比利时人，换了400法郎。高超的艺术并没有给他带来快乐，他居无定所，身怀绝艺而赤贫如洗，最后客死法国。

凡·高的境遇教育了荷兰人，今天的荷兰人对凡·高都有一分歉疚感，因而也增加了对凡·高的敬仰。他们在阿姆斯特丹建起了最漂亮的博物馆来纪念凡·高，来展示、学习凡·高。而且，荷兰政府也从凡·高的境遇中受到启示，他们提出，对艺术家要多一些关爱，多一些尊重，多一些理解，多一些宽容，绝不让荷兰出现第二个被埋没、被冷遇的凡·高。

Vincent van Gogh to Theo van Gogh

1

Paris, January 1876.

Dear Theo,

Thanks for your letter, write to me often, for I **long**[1] to hear from you in these days. Write me at length, speak to me of your **daily life**[2], you see that I am doing the

same. What you told me about Boks was very interesting, how he arranged his studio, and that you go there often — keep me well informed about those things.

We feel lonely now and then and long for friends and think we should be quite different and happier if we found a friend of whom we might say: "He is the one." But you, too, will begin to learn that there is much self-deception behind this longing; if we yielded too much to it, it would lead us from the road.

And now here is some news: my friend Gladwell is moving. One of the employees of the printing office convinced him to come and lodge with him; for quite a while he did everything he could to persuade him.

I know that Gladwell made this decision without thinking about it, I regret his **departure**[3] very much; it will be soon, probably towards the end of the month.

For several days we have had a mouse in our "**cabin**[4]", which is what we call our room. Every night, we put bread on the floor for it, and it knows already where to find it.

I have been reading the ads in the English newspapers, and I have already answered some of them. Let us hope for success.

Kind regards to Roos and others if they ask about me, and write soon. Dieu. Tell me if Mr. Tersteeg mentions me to you; give him my kindest regards whenever I write to you. Always,

Your loving brother
Vincent.

2

Ramsgate, 17 June 1876.
Dear Theo,

On Monday last, I travelled from Ramsgate to London. That is quite a stroll, the moment that I started on my way, it became very hot, and the same heat waited for me on my arrival at Canterbury. That evening, I pushed on a little bit too long; finally I halted in a place where there were many beech trees and some elms at the edge of a pond; there I rested for a while. The following morning at half past three, when the birds started singing to salute the first light of dawn, I **started off**[5] again. Ah! That was a good walk!

At midday I had made Chatham, where one can see in the distance, in the middle of **partial**[6] **flooding**[7] of **low-lying**[8] **meadows**[9], the Thames where the boats go; I thought the weather was always grey in these parts.

It was there that I met a cart, which took me a few miles further, but then the

driver went into an inn, and as I supposed I would have to wait a long time, I continued on my way. I arrived at the fall of night in the familiar suburbs of London and I wound my way through the town by long, long "roads". I stayed two days in London, I walked many times from one place to another in the city to make certain visits, particularly to a **pastor**[10] to whom I had already written …

If I find work it will tend towards a position between **clergyman**[11] and missionary in the suburbs of London, mainly to the working class population.

Don't breathe a word to anyone about this new idea, Theo. My salary at Mr. Stokes's is probably very small, just enough for room and board, then a few hours of freedom to give particular lessons; if there is no free time to spare, I earn all in all eight pounds per year …

My boy, you will think on reading my letter to the pastor: "He is not so bad, he's good!" But I am sure he is. Whatever he may be, think of him once in a while. A firm handshake from

Your loving brother
Vincent.

热词空间 Hot Word Space

1. long [lɔŋ] *vi.* 渴望
2. daily life 日常生活
3. departure [di'paːtʃə] *n.* 启程,出发
4. cabin ['kæbin] *n.* 小屋
5. start off 出发,开始
6. partial ['paːʃəl] *adj.* 部分的
7. flooding ['flʌdiŋ] *n.* 泛滥
8. low-lying 低的,低地的
9. meadow ['medəu] *n.* 草地,牧场
10. pastor ['pɑːstə] *n.* 牧师
11. clergyman ['kləːdʒimən] *n.* 牧师,教士

Document generated by Anna’s Archive around 2023-2024 as part of the DuXiu collection
(https://annas-blog.org/duxiu-exclusive.html).

Images have been losslessly embedded. Information about the original file can be found in PDF attachments. Some stats (more in the PDF attachments):
{
  "filename": "MTE4NDcyMTMuemlw",
  "filename_decoded": "11847213.zip",
  "filesize": 36930129,
  "md5": "e809a726e206ac4677dcd2083949549f",
  "header_md5": "355d2e5db9175fd8b18fff76a7a2f4e4",
  "sha1": "810b2173bd2c0133ea42754a9e1fc62e48f0c9ea",
  "sha256": "4d5ca5fec95ff8666c74a65702ad23f4dc4dc5564cc225eab3485968e197f634",
  "crc32": 816406827,
  "zip_password": "wcpfxk&*^TDwcpfxk",
  "uncompressed_size": 43465990,
  "pdg_dir_name": "",
  "pdg_main_pages_found": 215,
  "pdg_main_pages_max": 215,
  "total_pages": 226,
  "total_pixels": 1082174336,
  "pdf_generation_missing_pages": false
}